

PANEGYRICI  
CROMWELLO

K  
SCRIPTI.

*Vnus*

à Legato Portugallici Regis.

*Alter*

à Quodam Iesuita.



*Louis Elzune Loyden*

M. DC. LIV.

*may.*

CRONWELL

SCRIPT

1700

Legato Portugallia Regia



M DC LII





# PANEGYRICVS CROMWELLI.



Um ratione, iudiciisque imperandi Regna inter se Republicæque dissentiant, de modo tamen tractandi subditos omnino consentiunt. Politici Præceptores docent merita quoque timeri. Et Tacitus ejus rei causam affert quod quæ pars à Principibus remunerari congruenter nequit, ea in modum meriti præmii creditorum vertitur. Beneficia cōusque lata sunt, dum videntur exsolvi posse: ubi multum antevenere, pro gratiâ odium redditur. Principes ad dissimulandum potestatis defectum, maculam gratitudinis negligunt. Senatus ad evitandum Obedientiæ metum tyrannidis præcipitium non curat. Tiberius metuebat ex optimis periculum sibi. Athenæ Ostracismum Iustum putarunt. Qui famam minuere voluerunt, ut vitam extenderent, naturæ dotes compresserunt. Sed illi in quibus splendor virtutum, vilis timoris respectum superavit, tanquam Arbores quæ fructuum pondere obruuntur, perierunt. Ab his periculis liberat Divina providentia, quum vel in præmium virtutum, quæ in

quibusdam insunt, moralium; vel in supplicium, quæ ab aliis commissa sunt, Delictorum, justo ac occulto judicio sceptrâ adimit distribuitque. Eventus, in quibus fortuna hujusmodi successus vagata partite repræsentavit, visa est quodammodo eos in Angliæ Theatrum conjunctim induxisse, videmus quippe non solum coronam unam detractam, sed caput quoque Regium avulsum, Constitutam Rempublicam, Parlamentum reformatum, quod abusum patientiâ, quâ tolerabatur, dissolutum est ab iis, quibus tota ejus firmitas nitebatur. Quod apparuit, ut ante flagitiis; ita nunc legibus laborari. Nec obstitere crebræ admonitiones, nec quod omninò futurum erat, non toleraturos milites profani Principis Imperium. Quod si modos ac vias harum mirabilium transformationum inspiciamus, spectato tempore, perpensis rebus, consideratis personis, occurret animo Vir ille incomparabilis, qui anteaetis seculis Ideam non invenit, ac futuris deinceps parem non habebit, quoniam est Alexander sobrius, Cæsar moderatus, Pompejus felix, natus in domo nobili, quod ejus origo obscura esse non poterat. Non in magnis opibus, quod omnem fortuna liberalitatem in virtutibus collocavit, quarum ergà eum prodiga fuit. Hic est ille insignis, fortis, pius, Dominus OLIVERVS CROMWELL, è nobilissimâ Cromwellorum familiâ, è secundo filio genitus, ut illius splendor magis emineret, opum suffragiis destitutus. Primos ætatis suæ annos in studiis aliisque honestis exercitiis consumsit, eâ industriâ ac diligentia, ut dici de illo posset, quod de Catone, In hoc viro tanta vis animi ingeniique fuit, ut quocunque loco natus esset, fortunam sibi ipsi facturus videretur. Postea cum vidisset patriam vexatam & afflictam, publicam causam suscepit, quæ semper honestior esse solet. In hac tuendâ fortis & constans fuit, supremos & ultimos ho-

honores continuo non adiit, ut gradatim ascendens documentum daret, quâ ratione parere deberent ii, quibus postea Imperaturus erat. Per inferiores transitu facto, ad munus Generali proximum gradatim pervenit, cum singulari prærogativâ experientiæ, per omnes militares gradus acquisitæ, tam se ad singulos accommodabat, ut ad eum tantum quem exercebat natus videretur. Equitatum & pediatum, quamvis usu inter se ac ratione diversos æquè disponebat, utroque tanta & tam præclara gessit, ut dubium fecerit, uter majoris in acie momenti sit, cum constaret utrumque ad eos quos bellando felices consecutus exitus est, tanto duce indiguissse. Quoscunque militiæ honores gessit, in iis omnibus nimis religiose superioribus suis obediit, patrando maxima rerum gestarum gloriam Imperantibus tribuebat, eâ quidem modestiâ, ut sibi eos maximè devinceret, ac omnibus admirationem asferret, quoniam multò major habetur in milite victoria de ambitione nominis, quàm de hoste triumphare. Comes Fairfax ob has & alias virtutes tanti eum faciebat, ut ne maximarum quidem rerum cognitionem habere vellet, quod eam integram Cromwello reservaret. Cromwellus autem eorum etiam quæ solus agebat, & de quibus rationem Parlamento reddebat, Fairfacem authorem faciebat. Contigit Caroli I. cædes, cumque eam impedire non posset, vel ob violatam fidem, vel ob utilitatem Patriæ, quæ fortassis aliter tuta & securâ videri non poterat, vel ob fatale decretum, quod sæpè trahit ac torquet ea, quibus utitur, instrumenta, debitam pietatem præ se tulit, quæ rarò à robustis animis præstari solet, prius lavere lachrymæ Cromwelli conscientiam, quam cultrum Carnificis sanguis tinxisset; qui patriæ fidus extitit, is perfidus in Regem dici non potest; nec crudelis appellari, qui tam se pium exhibuit. Ecquis Cæsaris ad con-

speculum Pompeji capitis lachrymas commendabit? Ecquis Davidis in Saulis & Isbosethi cædibus dolores & luctus memoriam non renovabit? Expeditionem Hybernica[m] supremo cum Imperio Cromwello obtulit Parlamentum. Ingloria ei est visa illa, quæ generalis sui authoritati detrahebat. Certiorem eum fecit, confirmans admissurum non esse, etsi maximo supplicio proposito, nedum amplissimo oblato præmio. Ecquis non magis incitaretur illo officii genere, quàm dignitate? Ecquis non pluris faceret locum in quo erat; quòd talem subditum habebat, quàm quòd tali honore fruebatur. Novit Fairfax quantò se esset præstantior, hoc specimine & exemplo is, quem sciebat neutiquàm sibi inferiorem esse. Ac eodem tempore officio certavit, & bene de patriâ meritum, sed ostendit repudiando munus, & ex integro Cromwello assignando. Cumque diutiùs servire non posset, voluit eo obsequio præstito se recipere ac recedere; Politicen minimè sectatus Augusti qui malo post se successore relicto, comparatione deterrimâ gloriam sibi quaesivit: sed Galbæ bonitatem candoremque imitatus, qui laudabilem successorem Pisonem designavit. Laudari semper meruit, qui Trajanum adoptavit. Qui Cromwellum sibi anteposuit, ejus nunquam memoria abolebitur. Vix imperare arbitrio suo cœperat cum omnes, quas Fortuna ad summum humanæ felicitatis culmen evexerat gloriæ, in rapidissimum effusæ cursum per omnes Angliæ limites impetu quodam libero evagari occœperat. Bellicus illius ardor non poterat paucioribus quàm trium, Oceani, Britannici, Hybernici, marium spatiis terminari. Si continua & continens Tellus foret, videtur alia littora, alia maria, sed non alios limites in Univerſo invenire, qui alios in Angliâ terminos non invenit. Non citius Asiam Alexander, Scipio Africam, Europam Cæsar victores peragrarunt, quàm Cromwellus

wellus Hyberniam & Scotiam armis trophæisque percurrit, Angliâ eodem Tempore tranquillatâ. Tardius fulmen intortum ferit, quàm Cromwellus facinora sua patrabat: nunc itineribus inusuratis, nunc temerariis ausis; nunc stratagematibus inopinatis hostem opprimebat. Admiratione potius quàm vi superabat: prius sentiebant vulnus, quàm animadverterent quâ parte vulnerabantur. Gladium experiebantur, brachium non videbant. Distantia, incommoda, impedimenta hostes incautos reddebant: sed vigilantia, industria & violentia eodem momento eos obruebant. Angliâ pacatâ, domitâ Hiberniâ, subactâ Scotiâ, victor Londinum est reversus. Referre circumstantias, eventus, causas, casus, vias, rationes horum eventuum, nec tempus patitur, nec stylus; & multò minus metus, ne mihi fides habenda sit, permittit. Non commemoratis tantùm virtutibus Cromwellus labores, quibus se objecit, superavit: sed illâ etiam, que minus usitata inter milites, pietate. Eâ non modò Arces expugnavit, non modò prælia confecit, non modò oppida cepit, sed corda etiam semper devicit. Qui ab eò victi erant, non in captivitatem ducebat: invitabat libertate: non spoliabat quos superaverat, sed possessa ab iis bona confirmabat. Eodem quo obstinati ei se opponebant tempore, quando desperati portas aperiebant, tanquam hospes, non tanquam Dominus intrabat. Multi fiducia plus compararunt, quàm pertinaciâ, qua se tueri sperabant. Necessitas à plerisque recognita miseriis eorundem remedium attulit. Qui tam se in acie pium gerebat, mirum non est in senatu etiam pium fuisse. Qui in ipsa belli armorumque licentiâ modum servabat, domi sane in Pace moderatus esse debuit: Qui tam erat temperans in victoriis, qui non foret in quiete modestus? Voluit Parlamentum gratum se ei exhibere, & laudibus & honoribus, & præ-



præmiis. Aliis se opposuit, aliis se subduxit, omnia rejecit.  
 \* Docebat gratias laudesque Deo tantum debitas esse, qui Dominus Exercituum erat: sibi id sorte tantum, ut exiguum quoddam ac tenue occultorum ejus judiciorum instrumentum esset. Numa quondam minora egit, nec majorem præ se ferre potuit pietatem.

\* Deum Solum cole, qui mentem dat, qui animum confirmat, qui opes elargitur, qui hostium impetum retundit, qui victoriam omnibus & magnis viis gloriam dat. Laus. l. 5. s. 15.

Institit Respublica ut bona & reditus admitteret, quando ex stipendiis vix sibi reliquum ad victum reservabat. Initia bellorum moderata sane ac præcisa erant. Iam tam, cum militem vulneratum vidisset, nec haberet aliud quo subveniret, pallium ei suum donavit, ut liberalitas sine velo aperta maneret. Minus Alexander donans civitates largiendo processit; cum ei non tam pauca ac Cromwello manerent. Creverunt cum honoribus stipendia, sed non idcirco contractus est animus in iis quæ se dederunt occasionibus, si tempora & personæ conferantur, ac non Arithmetice sed Geometricè æstimentur. Certabat Respublica gratam se ostendere; Cromwellus generosum; nisi forte fuit alios exemplum optasse, ut tam honesto prætextu, cupiditatem suam velarent: Cromwellum autem tam integrâ actione voluisse, ne Respublica quam ab hostibus liberaverat, administrantibus præda fieret. Gesta summorum virorum, etiam minima, vel maximè vigilantium censuræ quædam sunt. Constat olim Romæ plura mutum Catonis aspectum quàm elegantes Hortensii Orationes correxisse. Verum etsi contentio illa, vel hâc vel aliâ ratione, quocunque animo ea fieret, culpa foret, præmia, quæ Cromwellus repudiare non poterat, quomodo iis utendum esset edocuit. Admisit: postulans à Parlamento Thesaurarium sibi designaret, is fuit Iohannes Thurloe, dignissimus Consilii Secretarius: ut è vicino ministri comperirent, quâ ratione quod à Republica haberent expensuri essent: sive ne ejus  
 ever-



everſionem appetere, ſive ut quod ex adminiſtratione colligebant, id ei cum ſcœnore redderent. Reditus rei familiaris in Xenodochia ſauciorum, in ſinus viduarum impendebat: quo quidam vires ad ſerviendum Reipublicæ repararent, aliæ lachrymas ob eos, qui jam olim ſervierant profuſas detergerent. Néceſſitates, quæ publicæ non erant privatis opibus ſublevabat. Vix ille noverat juſtam néceſſitatem, cum miſer experiebatur remedium. Multos nobiles, qui cauſâ Religionis, vel aliâ honeſtâ & idoneâ patiebantur, Tribunum vel Centurionem, cui non ſufficiebat ſtipendium, & qui patrimonio juvari non poterat, quod honeſtè ſplendideque locaret; milites qui rebus clare in militiâ geſtis, ab aliis ſe ſegregarunt, ac defectu veſtium inter alios non eminebant, clare juvabat. Incipiens jam tum prudenter virtutes proprias tegere, & alienas miſerias occultare, quas maximum vitiorum malum cogit pudore obſitas lucem metuere: & coram tyrannide ac ſuſpicionem erubescere. Tantum efficere non potuit cautâ indiſtriâ ut militiæ reſiſteret. Creſcebat invidia & obtreſtatio miniſtrorum. Timebant moderatum ex ratione Imperium. Sciebant gladium Symbolum eſſe juſtitie: nec leges ab eâ manu volebant accipere, in quâ ille inflecti non poterat. Facilius eſt non delinquere, quàm ſe pœnâ eximere: quia Deo miniſtri non deſunt, nec ei in multum temporis patientia ſuppetit. Cupiditas apud externos malè audiebat. Multis è partibus nuntiabant venale ſecretum ac ſuffragium eſſe, ac in eodem gradu utilitatem & firmitatem Reipublicæ conſiſtere. Nec mirum graſſari impotentiam, ubi imperium ſine juridiſtione exercebatur, quoniam adminiſtrationis tempus exierat, communi populorum querelâ. Injuſtitia & injuria proximis pares erant. Factiones exiſtebant, vim, adulteria, ſupra, emptiones invitis Dominis, &

magno detrimento Reipublicæ. Quidam prætextu Religionis toties damnatæ, obnoxias sibi per hypocrisin conscientias habere volebant, quæ secundum Scripturam Sacram opprimi non debent: Nonnulli nomine necessitatum Reipublicæ impositione gravissimorum vectigalium communium vexari populos & obrui volebant: cumque bella voluntaria forent, tributa in necessitatem vertebantur. Reverentia Generalis satis non erat: nec ratio ipsa, nec persuasio ejus adnexa consilio: nec sufficebat verecundia authoritati congruens suæ. Dum potuit, Amnestiæ Autor fuit, quo bis vicit eos quos continebat gladio beneficioque, hoc discrimine, quòd ab illo liberari se aliquando posse sperabant: huic se æternum addictos fore intelligebant: non se solùm præsentis ac vivos, sed filios posterorūque benignitatis hæredes. Presbyterianorum iram, & intemperantiam coërcuit, qui animo hypocrisi involuto nunc juramentis, nunc animadversionibus importunis Ministros Publicos omnesque vexabant. Populos sæpè tributis levavit, quæ iis nomine Classium ac Copiarum imponebantur, & quorum tantum termini exspectabantur, qui quotidie adesse simulabantur, nisi manus Cromwelli eos impedisset. Dum in publicâ utilitate versabatur, privatam quietem negligebat. Harum virtutum splendor mentes ministrorum obscurabat, ac eorum animos invidiâ torquebat. Non consulebat sibi Cromwellus, ut Reipublicæ attenderet: non consulebant Reipublicæ ministri, ut Cromwello nocerent. Causam quam ad illum magnificiendum habebant, in delictum ad eum lædendum vertebant. Volebat Cromwellus eodem actu, Parlamenti mutato tamen tribunali, administrationem corrigere. Putabant quidam ex ministris obstaculum illi esse magnanimo monere expirasse item munus militare, perinde ac bellicus lituus & sceptrum onera non essent, quæ

quæ quivis prudens expendens rejiceret, & Cromwelli illud pondus intolerabile non foret. Offensus removit se paulum ab administratione. Sed à studio in Remp. non recessit: Cumque remedio opus esse vidisset, operam suam omnem posuit, ut id quàm minimo damno foret. Successus tam voto benè respondit; ut vel conspectus credi non posset; ac multò minus ab alio iudicio præstari. Ultimo Aprilis M D C L I I I. suscepit patrocinium querelarum militarium quas militaris Tribunus Harrison exposuit. Non tunc primùm accidit, ut ii Leges Senatui darent. Forte nunquam æquo jure. Confirmavit Cromwellus se instar medici adesse, qui prius mollia adhibet medicamenta, quàm dura inferat: fomenta præcedere cauteria, si vellent pace dissolvi & abire, pace recederent: sin minus, vim adhibendam esse. Non tulit ejus moderatio præterire libellum eorum quæ publicè deliquerant quidam ministrorum, unde origo errorum omnium extiterat. Fores clausit, quæ toties Ambitioni & adulationi & mendacio apertæ fuerant. Eo in statu Civitas mansit, in quo Roma esse solebat, cum Iani templum clauderetur. Extulit secum sceptrum Parliamentariæ potestatis symbolum, quòd malè eo usi fuissent. Portarunt milites ut à quibus illud constitutum erat, defenderetur. Qui culpam cum potest, non vitat, velo obducto, ei indulget. Non urbs sola acta probavit, quod causæ idoneum est testimonium; sed tria Regna comprobarunt, tot ea secuti sunt. Ea orbis mirabitur, ac de iis venturi ob magnitudinem ambigent. Non fuit astus, non fraus non ambitio quæ tot animos conciliavit. effectus sanè injustitiæ alienæ fuit: fuit spes æquitatis, non poterat de honestate operis dubitare, qui nomen Autoris audiebat. Exercitus Classis eandem mentem & sensum amplexa. Alii Principes timere sibi videntur, ne subditi quoque sui ad Crom-

\* Adver-  
sum pa-  
trum fa-  
litiones  
multa po-  
pulus para-  
vit tuenda  
libertati,  
& firman-  
da concor-  
dia; voca-  
ti qui de-  
cemviri,  
& accita  
qua us-  
quam egre-  
gia. An-  
nal. 3.

wellum transeant. \* Concilium instituit, collegitque ex iis, qui majorem virtutis opinionem habebant. In Electis qui Experimentiâ probati sunt, & dotibus, quæ Consiliarios decent, ornantur, nulla sic virtus, ac bonitas enitescit.

Quæ habenda ratio imperandi haud loquar. Sed nemo dubitat quin sit, quod maximè congruat; non audent omnes dicere, quod sciunt cupere: à modestiâ Generalis sibi metuunt; sperantque ne offendat eos, qui eum tanto- perè diligunt. Generalis ne illos lædat, animum suum occultare pergit, ne iis, qui tanto cum desiderio expetunt, negare videatur: Pugnant amore & officio; illi, ut laborem jubendi suscipiat; ille, ne videatur ambitio vel studium eos defendere. Intra Generalis animum pugnat gratitudo cum modestiâ. Sperant omnes, ut communis ejus administra- tionis necessitas prævaleat; & pax tuta vigeat, Religio li- beretur, seculum aureum restituatur.

F I N I S.



P A.

# PANEGYRICVS

*Clarissimo Anglorum Imperatori*

## OLIVERO CROMWELLO

### SCRIPTVS.



Um sæpè mecum diuque repeterem, quæ præclara ex assiduâ Lectione veterum Heroïci temporis virorum memoria exempla collegeram, occurrebat animo species quædam eximia ac præstans ex omnium conflata virtutibus, quam instar Ideæ mihi proponebam, ut in quos hujusce ætatis viros insignes inciderem, eorum ad illam imagines conformarem. Et verò ita rem de industriâ componente fortunâ, maximam & nobilissimam Europæ partem peragravi, in quâ peregrinatione, & inveni casu, & studio reperi multos omni genere laudum præstantes, quos uti quisque excellebat, ad illam speciem, quæ menti infederat, referebam, & quantum ad eam singuli accederent ab eave recederent observabam: ac ex similitudine in suo quemque gradu constituebam. Ac fuerunt, qui collatis dotibus eam ex parte referrent, quidam & pene repræsentarent: qui tamen omninò exprimeret, fateor fuisse neminem. Et quidem optandum id magis quam sperandum videbatur. Ecquis enim esset, qui omnia undique Togæ militiæque ornamenta colligeret, ut Ideam iis constantem posset æquare? Verum effecit adventus in Britanniam meus ne desperarem: quæ cum ab alio (opinio-



ne veterum) divisa orbe orbem alium efficiat, exhibuit quod ille præstare non potuit. Expectatio jam erat ex fama hominis magnâ & præclarâ, sed quæ desiderium magis accenderet, quàm spem afferret inveniendi in eo quod voto finxissem. Imò verebar ne, quod solet in majus res componere fama, commotam expectationem præsens ejus viri, & si præclara virtus sustineret. Is verò tu ipse, quem intueor, CROMWELL Imperator eras, Patriæ decus, Reipublicæ præsidium, Angliæ ornamentum. In te ut incidi, & doctes tuas introspexi & cum iis quas in imaginem illam mentis conjeceram, exacte contuli, mihi persuasi, aut illam æquasse Te, aut certè magis ad eam prope quàm quenquam alium accessisse. Quod cum jam antea ego perpenſis diligenter rebus à te hætenus militiæ domique præclare gestis apud me statuissẽ, nunc planè confirmavi, cum vidi à Te repente sine rumore, sine ambitione, sine dissidio orbem conversum esse Reipublicæ! Quâ in re, quæ certè difficilima est, egregium judicii, prudentiæ, magnanimitatis, integritatis specimen præbuiſti. Nam quod majus judicium, quàm prævenire tot Sapientium & Politicorum hominum mentes, ne quid aut ante animadverterent aut animadversum præstarent? Quid prudentius, quàm rem tantam ex ante comparatam silentio habere ac ex tempore credere, ut nata non meditata videretur: ac ipsâ celeritate animos opprimere? Quæ vis animi major, quàm in ipso Senatti coram Senatores ipsos arguere, ac eos dignitate exuere & Concilium totum dissolvere? Quid incorruptius, quàm privatis rationibus propositis, sublatam administrationem patriæ permittere & populo reddere; cum præsertim patratâ re constaret, posse ad se traducere summam Reipublicæ? Nonne hoc est in arce quadam mentis consistere, ambitioni moderari, omnesque intemperantis animi motus



motus rationi subicere, ac, quod vel difficilimum sapientissimo cuique, sibi imperare? Hunc Gloriæ Tuæ cumulum ò Cromwell addidisti, qui non modo trophæa de hostibus erecta superasti, verùm etiam splendore suo oppressisti & obscurasti. Hactenus bello viceras alios, nunc Te ipsum vicisti. Aliarum victoriarum comites habuisti multos, hujus socium præter te neminem: nec enim Cromwellem nisi Cromwell vinceret. Depuleras ante servitutem alienam: nunc à timore illius, quæ à te esse poterat liberaasti. Antea patriæ assertor, nunc Pater. Imò & quod nemini ante te contigit, Patriæ & Filius: nam eam ita liberaasti, ut ei te subjiceres, vindicasti armis, sed arma subdidisti. Prostrasti hostem sed victor te ad nutum Patriæ abjecisti. Cum omnia supercilio temperares tuo, Patriæ nutui obtemperasti. Quod egeras in hostes inimicè, amicè in Amicos egisti. Non quod ii contra patriam quicquam molirentur, sed ne à constituto cum patriâ recederent. Illi Aristocratix studere: Tu Democratix: Illi optimates agere: Tu populares eligere. Illi contrahere ad se Rempublicam. Tu ad populum extendere. Illi arbitrio suo administrare publica: Tu communi sensu cuncta gerere. Non quod illi deliquissent, sed ne delicti suspicionem crearent. Consuluisi eorum fidei honorem conservasti. Nec iis fecisti injuriam, invidiæ materiam sustulisti. Nec tam eorum consilia improbasti, quàm in melius referre voluisti. Noras quippe liberum Angliæ gentis ingenium, non laturæ umbram servitii: instar Romanæ, quæ ne in vindice quidem suo inanem sonitum nominis redolentis tyrannidem tulit. Passus est Senatus citra noxam, quod Collatinus præter injuriam. Detur hoc Libertati, ut in se tuendâ modum excedat. Nimis in libertate vitiosum non est. Non magis suggillandus est Cromwell quòd Senatum sustulerit, quàm Brutus quòd Consulem

Amicum

Amicum & Socium Collatinum ejecerit. Constitueras ante Remp. Cromwell, qui Libertati Author extiteras. Tuum erat constitutam sustinere: illa te custodem fidum ac industrium sui esse voluerat: in id sane arma tradiderat: in speculâ positus vigilare debueras. Sensisti populum commoveri, datam sibi fidem exigere, optare ne quid nisi ex constituto fieret, vidisti exercitus qui se fidei publicæ prædes quodammodo & obsides fecerant, indignari: advolasti. Ex armis alas effecisti, ut populi studiis obtemperares. Non tuo aut arbitrio adfuiſti, aut judicio tranſegisti, aut sensu mutasti quicquam; Omnia ex voluntate populi, quæ publici Imperii fons & origo est, suscepisti, effecisti: nec tam illi, quam rationi ac fidei in eo imperanti obtemperasti. Iuris Communis defensor extitisti, nec nisi ad illud tuendum arma sumeres, innoxia, pacata, pura, fidei pignora, addicta Reipublicæ, patriæ mancipata. Quod si senatum dissolvisti, Censorio usus es munere. Romanum Magistratum Londinum invexisti. Movebat loco Censor Senatores Romæ. Tū Censoris instar Londini, Senatores loco movisti, Senatum retinuisti, communem dignitatem servasti, nec in personis læsisti muneris gradusve majestatem. Privatum quod erat caducum, sublatum est, commune quod perannet, remotum. Maſte ô Cromwell Iudicio, maſte prudentia, maſte fide, maſte integritate. Liberatâ ante Republicâ clarus, constitutâ inclytus, sed ea nunc mutatâ glorioſus. Equidem hoc ego pulcherrimum à Te facinus profectum cum vidissem, & lineamenta in Te jam antea præclaræ illius Idææ pleraque ac perſpicua deprehendissem, judicavi Eum esse Te, quem tamdiu optassem, tanto studio quæſiſsem: ac subito gaudio sum perſuſus, quod Te invento, ingentis voti compos extiti. Vidi enim, vidi imaginem omnis in Te Politicæ, publicæque virtutis esse perfectam: quam cum ad  
con-

conceptam animo speciem retulissem, perspexi Ei tam esse Tuam congruentem, ut nihil omnino ad indiscreram similitudinem deesset. Imò cum paullum ab eâ, quam apud me formaveram, ad Tuam, mentis aciem direxissem, & intentius descriptam ad locum alterius transtulissem, sensi nihil interesse, utra in eo loco consisteret; quin propè fuit; ut grato Errore ambigerem, utra utrius imago esset, cum utraque Idea esse potuisset. Age verò, quæ in illâ, quam mente finxeram formâ dotes, virtutesque inessent, expendamus; atque ad illas ornamenta & facinora Tua referamus, & iis collatis, an Tua Ideæ imago respondeat, exploremus. Primùm: (nam id quoque optandum est) Nobilitatem cum animo conceperam, puram eam, honestam, splendidam; non delicatam, non fumosam, apud me fingebam: Removebam ab eâ sordes, quales in Mario, Iphicrate, Philopœmene, inesse compereram. Secernebam à deliciis, à fastu, à fumo; cujusmodi fuisse Alcibiadis, Luculli, Pisonis, Crassi, Syllæ deprehenderam. Placebat ea quæ solida, & quæ pudore secluso, superbiam non afferret. procul à sordibus, ad splendorem prope accedens, cui nemo detraheret, quæ detraheret nemini: clara quidem & conspicua, sed quæ aliorum luminibus non officeret: quæ se solâ contenta non esset, nec factis abstineret, quod lucis satis in sanguine habere se crederet. Sed quæ stimularet ad famam, & virtutibus cuperet augeri: quæ non socordes sed fortes: non ignavos sed gnavos redderet. Qualem apud Spartanos Brasidas & Lysander; apud Athenienses Miltiades, Themistocles, Conon; apud Thebanos Epaminondas, apud Romanos Coriolanus, Decius, Metellus, Sertorius habuere. Huiusmodi Tuam esse, Clarissime Imperator Cromwell, comperimus; puram, solidam, veram; non fuci sed succi plenam; non tam floribus, quàm thoris

constantem : non involutam fumo & in auras euntem , sed apertam & claram , firmo vestigio ad summa conantem ; in quâ Te jactes , non insolēscas , quæ neminem negligat , & à nemine despiciatur ; quæ non desideret lucem ; sed à Te splendorem desideret ; laudis non vacuam , sed plenitudinem gloriæ anhelantem . Nobilitati , quæ aliena magis quàm propria , quod ab aliis accipitur , dici solet , adjecerim Studia Literarum , quibus excoleretur Ingenium , subigeretur , illustraretur mens , acueretur ratio : Sed ea tamen in homine ad Remp. instituto , & ad Politica munia traducendo moderata optabam . Nam cum Ars gerendi & administrandi Remp. actiuosa *περαλυσή*que fermè sit , consilio magis & prudentiâ , quàm scientiâ & sapientiâ , quæ speculatrix est , ac *προφύλαξις* continetur . Quare necesse est ei , qui ad eam regendi & imperandi artem educatur , tingi quidem literarum studiis , quæ modicè erudiant , & ab eo ignorantiam incitiamque depellant , non ita tamen institui , ut exactè illas & perfectè calleat : nescio enim quo pacto illa acumina scientiarum , cùm intellectum acuant , hebetent animum ; ac ejus ad Respublicas gerendas intentionem frangant . Fortè quòd spiritus ad Actiones necessarios extenuent , & extenuando absument , proindeque defectus iis animus elanguescat . Delicata illa ingenii & mentis studia sunt : solem & pulverem non amant : umbrâ ac secessu delectantur , turbâ & negotiis impediuntur : contrahuntur horrore armorum , & forensi strepitu deterrentur . Tanquam nobiles ac teneræ virgunculæ Domi liberali custodiâ potius continendæ sunt , quàm in aciem discrimenque educendæ . Quare Nobilissimi superiorum ætatum Imperatores sic se instituendos præceptoribus dederunt , ut colerent magis illa studia quàm profiterentur , tantumque incumberent , quantum satis esset ad instruendas mentes , non penitus imbuen-  
das.

das. Eam rationem Achilles Heros sub Chirone & Phœnice: Eam Alexander sub Aristotele: Epaminondas sub Lyfiâ: Scipio sub Panætio tenuerunt. Brasidam, Agefilaum Cleomenem, Lacedæmonum; Miltiadem, Cimonem, Timotheum Atheniensium; Pelopidam Thebanorum; Fabium Marcellum Scipionem alterum majorem, Flaminium, Pompejum Romanorum maximos Duces non indoctos fuisse accepimus: sed ab illâ disciplinarum, quæ homines literatos reddit, institutione alienos. Quanquam verò Pericles inter Græcos, Iulius Cæsar inter Romanos videri possint Sapientes, certè laus illa intra Eloquentiam, quâ maximè uterque valuit, continetur: quæ impetu & naturâ magis quàm arte præceptisque consistit. Itaque alterum fulminare cum dicebat, alterum eo animo, quo bellavit, dicere, memoriæ proditum est. Hac sanè quam ego in hisce aliisque clarissimarum Gentium Ducibus observaram, ratione, ad literarum studia, Imperator maxime Cromwell, animum adjecisti. Collegisti quidem Cantabrigiæ literarium pulverem, sed non in eo orbitam altiorempresististi. Excoluisti animum iis artibus, quæ liberalem indolem decent, deterfisti rubiginem mentis, ingenium acuisti, eam opinionem conciliaisti, ut imperitiæ notam evitares, Tequè ad summa Reipublicæ munia gerenda disciplinarum rudimentis comparares. Illud quidem ingenii specimen præbuiisti, ut palam faceres, si velles ulterius discendo progressi, summis Te magistris parem esse potuisse. Quod olim de Iulio, cujus Tu proximè vestigia sequeris, vel princeps ipse in omni doctrinarum genere Cicero testatus: Verùm eum Tu in gerendâ Republica quàm Ciceronem, imitari maluisti, non sedentario ac delicato Senatoris: Sed irrequieto & acri, laboriosoque munere Imperatoris. Non decebat mollem in otio literario manum languescere, quæ ad



arma tractanda erudienda erat, asperitate ac induranda. Non inter noctuas tenebris addictas implicanda plumis dextera, qua inter Aquilas solis æmulas, paulò post erant fulmina intorquenda. Quod ad institutum vitæ attinet, optimi quippe Imperatores probi ac frugi cives fuerunt, & dum eorum operâ patria non indigebat, domesticis rebus, privatisque negotiis, si qua occurrerent, intenti vacabant. Ethicem & Oeconomien, quæ ad Politicem documento & adjumento sunt, tum erga se exercitatione virtutum, tum erga suos institutione, & exemplo profitebantur. Nec enim qui sibi moderari nequeat, suos in officio continebit; & qui Familiam suam rectè administrare nesciat, ab eo Resp. geri non poterit. Nec minor sanè laus est optimi civis, quàm summi ducis; cum illud propriæ industriæ ac virtutis sit: hoc multorum operæ & plerumque Fortunæ. Quippe qui benè moratus civis non fuerit, Patriæ perniciosus existeret. Talis Pisistratus, & Critias apud Athenienses, Cajus & Tiberius Gracchus primum, deinde Antonius apud Romanos fuit. Ideò præstantes quippe in Republica viri probare moribus sui fidem & studia patriæ voluerunt. Hac se Camillus & Fabricius Romanis; Amilcar & Annibal Pœnis; Lycurgus & Agis Lacedæmoniis; Solon & Phocion Atheniensibus; Philopœmenes Achæis; Dion Syracusanis probitate commendarunt. Ac eo quidem casto & incorrupto tenore vitæ extremis Libertatis Romanæ temporibus duo Marci excellerunt; Marcus Cato & Marcus Brutus. Horum Tu (Cromwell) ita imitatus es mores, ut planè expresseris. Domum receptus, quam nobilem copiosamque acceperas & feceras, ductâ clarissimâ conjuge, ita privatus vixisti, ut Magister probitatis viderere, non extra vitia tantum quæ exigua laus est, sed intra virtutes. Iuvabat indoles excelsa; generosa; cui nisi honesta placerent.

Inerat



Inerat iudicium certum, constans, maturum; quod integritatem probabat. Animus à cupiditate & avaritiâ liber sordes aspernabatur. Accedebat prudentia, quæ rationi consentanea suadebat. Itaque facile erat virtutem amplecti, & eam foras per exempla producere. Quibus ceu vivis documentis Familia instituta, optimorum doctrinam morum imbibebat: seque præceptori suo conformabat. Nul- lum in ea recti honestique officium quisque Stoicæ Philo- sophiæ Magister desideraret. Non integrius Cincinnatus, non incorruptius Serranus, non honestiùs Cato ille Cen- sorius vixit. Divinare jam tum eum crederes, quid futurum esset, atque ex ante se præparare ad admirationem Reipu- blicæ. Intra humanitatem severus, intra severitatem hu- manus: facilis juxta gravisque: moderatus & celsus: parcus sine sordibus: liberalis intra modum; sed plerunque parsi- moniæ iratus, largitati pronus, ut videretur modo indi- gnari, excessurus, nisi vitium esset: multa sibi interdicare; plura aliis indulgere, at citra licentiam; hanc castigare, & frænare iram; coercere luxum, omnes in officio contine- re; amicitias impense colere; inimicitias haud temere susci- pere; sed susceptas constanter retinere; verum amoris plus, odio minus tribuere. Iam verò pati quædam, nonnullis succensere, sed plura dissimulare, ac dissimulando sagax & astutum ingenium præ se ferre. His dotibus tum insitis à naturâ tum comparatis industriâ, natus factusque ad sum- ma Reipublicæ videbare. Meritis antevertebas dignitates, & antequam adipiscerere, dignum Te, qui gereres, planè monstrabas. Nec Te ingessisti, nisi cum operam tuam ex- petivit fortuna Reipublicæ. Illud priscis heroibus sanctum & solenne fuit, occasiones juvandi Rempublicam expecta- re, non sumere; ne viderentur studio ambitionis ducti, obtrudere se honoribus, & privata commoda rationibus

anteferre communibus. Nec enim debet civis honestus & bonus ad Remp. non vocatus accedere; censeretur autem vocari, aut cum rogatus nomine Populi, aut cum ejus opem implorat status miser rerum publicarum. Ita se gessisse legimus Camillum, Gallis Senonibus invadentibus Romam, cum ab Ardeâ ubi exulabat, collegit milites, & hostes oppressit avertitque. Nec ei præferendus Cincinnatus est, qui ad abigendos hostes Æquos à populo Romano, rure est evocatus. Nisi forte peccavit Lucius Junius Brutus, cum privatus illatam Lucretiæ vim ultus, Regem Tarquinium eiecit: & Marcus Brutus, cum Tyrannum sustulit, ut regnum tolleret. Magnum pondus habet necessitas publica: majorque est vis injuriam patientis, quàm rogantis: cum interdum os ei obstruatur ne roget: ac ne gemendi quidem potestatem habeat. Oblata, eaque ingens Tibi subvenienti Patriæ calamitatibus Cromwell Clarissime! occasio est. Causas ego mutati Imperii non inquiero. Tantùm studium libertatis laudo; & præclara à Te in eâ statuendâ & confirmandâ gesta facinora. Et si enim prudentium sit moveri magis causis eventorum, quàm ipsis eventis: ac his regi ac duci plebis ineruditæ proprium videatur: præstat tamen externum hominem ab indagandis examinandisque rerum causis abstinere, quæ occultæ ac graves sæpè sunt, nec temere investigari, censerique debent. Ab eo præsertim qui iis interesse non potuit: cui eventus tantùm, qui perspicui sunt, licet expendere: nec verò ignorantia id, aut inertia, sed prudentiæ ac modestiæ imputandum. Præterea etsi stultum sit ex eventibus æstimare judicia consultantium, eaque successibus aut eos judiciis metiri, cum quid eventurum est, in nostrâ potestate non sit; non est tamen à ratione alienum, in eventibus judicia quædam superioris Providentiæ agnoscere, ac revereri, quæ sæpe recte consulta  
dissi-

dissipari finit, & temere suscepta confirmat, ad exitum faustum felicemque perducit. Itaque humana ex successibus consilia æstimanda non sunt; sed in iis divina judicia pendenda, timendaque. Vnde egregie Lucanus de Bello civili inter Pompejum & Cæsarem dixit:

*Victricem causam Diis displicuisse, Catoni victam* —

ut doceret interdum probatæ causæ eventum deesse, nec semper meliora melius cadere; aliter rem superis, quàm probent homines, disponentibus. Nam cum multò justior causa Pompeji, quàm Cæsaris esset, atque ob id Catoni placuerit: aliter tamen videri visum est superis, dum civili bello, qui causa vincebat, vinci eum voluerunt. Non eò hæc dico, quod improbem causas mutati imperii; sed ut consilium eas permutandi meum, Tibi ipsi, cæterisque legentibus approbem; atque adeò eventus solos, quos felicissimos virtus tua effecit, commemorem. Atque id præstando appareat, cui res tam prospere feliciterque cesserunt, cum omnia sua consilia, studia, facta ad communem utilitatem salutemque Reipublicæ non sine Numine contulisse. Igitur cum Anglia se ad nomen Libertatis commovisset, & ad illud quasi signum à Patria propositum, cives convolare cœpissent, in animum induxisti Tuum, Clarissime Cromwell, non medium te gerere, sed uni parti addicere, & sensus ei tuos studiaque adjungere. Nullum esse in Republica putabas civem, qui nullarum partium esset. Memineras illius memorabilis Solonis judicii: qui (Tullio teste) capite sanxit, si quis in seditione non alterutrius partis fuisset: quo idem motus Cicero Pomponii Attici relicta sententia Pompejanis, quas saniores existimabat, partibus se dedit. Censebas, qui neutram sequatur partem, cum tumidum, aut avarum, aut penitus ambiciosum esse, cum dum ab alteris timeret, nolit ornamenta aut parta amittere,

aut

aut sperata contemnere. Retinere sibi sua; ac omnem eventum in suas rationes trahere; nec tam Patriæ quàm sibi consulere conatur. Sanè cum ea scissa est in partes, qui in alterutra non sit, is medium ubi consistat non habet: atque ad eò civis esse non potest. Prævidisti hæc sapienter: ac uni te parti dedisti. In qua eligenda Libertatis rationem habuisti: ut ibi patriam esse existimares, ubi Libertas esset. Iudicasti sub glorioso nomine inesse posse nobilem speciem servitutis. Sanè ad quos accessisti, magnum iis præjudicii pondus, & fortunæ momentum attulisti. Causæ ii Catonem, Bello Cæsarem Comitem advenisse putarunt. Plurimis ea causa probari cæpit, quod eam tu approbares. Non pauci alteri diffidere quod tu defereres. De eventu omnes agitare. Sed cum te videre pugnantem, nemo non tuis victoriam portendere. Et quidem principio mixtus Principibus bellasti: sed ita ut inter eos Princeps esses. Id omnes mirari: tot in te bellicas virtutes subito affuisse; ut eas in sinus animi collegisse antea & uno omnes impetu effudisse videre. Prudentia Fabium, astu Annibalem, ardore Marcel- lum, virtute Camillum, fortitudine Cursorem, dexteritate Scipionem, violentia Cæsarem referebat. Sic aciem instruere, sic explicare, sic aggredi, sic hostem circumvenire, sic urgere, sic premere, sic impellere, sic dejicere, sic dissipare, sic fundere, ceu ex eorum contubernio prodiis- ses. Nam quæ de iis apud scriptores legimus, ea expressa à Te oculis nostris inspeximus. Quæ illi documenta virtutis dederant, tu pugnando exempla effecisti. Tot dotes erant, ut uno capi vix posse viderentur: sed omnium natura tua capax erat, & adhuc vacuus ad alios locus patebat, quæ cum plures numero esse non possent, creverunt istæ & majores factæ locum implerunt. Militaria munia obiisti, ut ad Imperatorium pulment per gradum ascenderes: ne quis for-  
tunæ

tunæ potius aut gratiæ, quàm virtuti, aut meritis honores assignaret. Tardius eos es consecutus, quàm communia vota optabant. Nullum adeptus quem non antè judicia destinaſſent: ad quem studia populi cum plausu deduxiſſent. In ſummâ omnium voluntate ſola tua decrat: invitus ad honores trahebaris: preſabant te homines, te ambiebant, quas alii ambiunt, dignitates. Novum hoc erat, ſed virtuti tuæ congruum: circuiſi te undique & optari, deque te omnes uno contendere. Quin iplâ glomerabantur negotia, occaſiones cumulabantur rerum pro Republica gerendarum. Paucis annis imò menſibus tot patraſti, quot ſummi alii Duces integris ætatibus vix agere potuerunt. Serebantur bella ex bellis: nulli non intereras. Verrebat ſe in facies rerum ſtatus. omnibus proſpiciebas. Fluctuabat variis agitata motibus Reſpublica. Clavum tu ad quemcunque impulſum fleſtebas. Alius obrueretur, quibus tu volabas. Circumducebas copias, circumferebas arma, perinde ac membra artuſque tuos moveres. Quod de Romano milite Tullius ſcitè ac diſertè dixit. Eum cum ſuſcepto itinere onuſtus gradiebatur non numerare magis inter onera arma, quàm humeros, lacertos, manus, quòd illis, ceu membris utebatur: id certè in te Imperatoria gerente munera quadrat mirificè. Omnia ſic obibas, ut non modò obeundo minimè laborares, ſed ut per ea ſentire ac vivere videreris. Nec oneri eſſe ducebas, ſed adjumento, & incitamento. Inſolentia rei animos hominum commovebat. Mirari complures poſſe à te tantam negotiorum molem ſuſtineri, ignari proſectò virtutis tuæ, ac eam ſuarum virium æſtimatione metientes. Quia pondere impares erant, parem ei te non putabant. Ecquis naturæ avium inſcius, & volandi rationis ignarus in Aquilam humi cubantem incidens, ac vim pennarum denſiſſimarum maximarumque ſcapulis & dorſo in-



cumbentem aspiciens, non putet iis opprimi & gravari? credens eam plumeam molem impedimento ac oneri esse coopertæ ac involutæ? Et cum postea videat excutientem alas, explicantem pennas, & circinnato plumarum orbe coronantem aëra, seque librantem, ac mox impetu rapidissimo, cursu volatico, qui præ celeritate deprehendi vix possit in nubes abeuntem, & momento ipsorum quos deluserat oculorum aciem fugientem & in confinio syderum versantem, non agnoscat inani se specie deceptum ignorantiae suæ in pennato volucris pœnas dedisse: ac quod volandi rationem minimè compertam haberet, tam absurdè & ineptè de Aquilâ judicasse. Fateatur necesse est ille pennas avibus ad volandum à natura datas: quibus illæ tamen uti solæ possint, cum aliis instrumenta celeritatis non sint, sed potius impedimenta, quòd non apta ad volandum corpora fortiantur. Haud secus qui te Clarissime Imperator tot ornamentis præditum, tot dotibus ornatum, tot muniis distentum, tot curis implicitum, tot negotiis districtum, tantâ rerum mole occupatum vidisset, ac iis virtutibus destitutus, & vacuus, quibus tu abundas, minùs benè te nosset, ac in te tanta sustinentem agentemque intueretur, existimaret obrutum ac oppressum iri onere, ac pondere dotium, rerumque & occupationum maximarum: quem tamen cum vidisset postea tantæ moli parem, facilè omnià & sustinentem & obeuntem: ac iis quasi plumis ad volandum utentem, erroris sui pœnitens planè damnatâ inscitiâ fateretur Aquilam te Pyrrho Imperatori ac Regi præstantissimo (quem vocarunt Aquilam) similem esse, qui nubes volatu possis transcendere, & solem fortibus oculis intueri. Ea est ratio administrandi belli, ut prudentiam æquè ac fortitudinem exigat. Nam vis consilii expertus impetu suo ruit: & Consilium viribus destitutum senescit, & languet. Arma-

tam



tam idcirco è Cerebro Iovis prodeuntem Veteres finxerunt Palladem : ut docerent Arma valere consilio, & Armis muniri judicia. In cerebro excogitari viam ad arma promovenda : nec nisi in officinâ cogitationum & curarum cudi invicta tela: illum è cœlo pugnare qui utrumque conjungat. Pro Numine habendum ducem, qui Arma Consiliis misceat. Hunc instar Numinis Fortunæ istibus non esse obnoxium : ac minus quàm Achillem patere vulneribus. Consilio Romanos sæpe Annibal maximeque attrivit. Hunc non armis rursus Romani sed Fabii consiliis fregerunt. Idcirco Nestora Agamemnoni Polydamanta, Priamo, Homerus Consiliarios attribuit in eo, quod clarissimum fuit, bello; cum alteri Achilles, alteri Hector adesset: ut quanta in consiliis vis ad res bellicas administrandas essent indicaret. Vtroque te, Cromwell Amplissime, in maximis quos suscepisti gessistisque bellis valuisse comperimus. Ingenio acutus: manu promptus: judicio maturus; dexterâ validus: consiliis lentus, armis expeditus; sagax ad prævidendas, cavendasque insidias, ad præcipiendas occupandasque artes callidus: ad dissipanda & eludenda consilia hostium providus. Momenta temporum exacte pendere, quæ cum levissima sint magnum ad victoriam pondus afferunt: occasiones expectare, ac eas venatico captare more: ut cum se darent, quâ tenderent, quo evaderent exploratum esset. A fronte occurrebas omnibus, & quâ maximè crinitæ erant, apprehendebas. Iis non utebare modò, sed etiam fruebare. Nullam elabi aut cum Hannibale ad Cannas, aut cum Pontio ad Caudium, aut cum Pompejo ad Dyrrachium passus es. Scipionem ad Zamam, Neronem ad Metaurum, Cæsarem ad Pharsaliam imitatus: Patebant tibi aliena consilia, nemini Tua. Astutus ad explorandum, cautus ad regendum. Oculatus cum Andabatis præliabare. Cum omnium cogi-

tata anteverteres, nemo antevertit tua: nisi cum patrata videbat. Fulminis instar prius seriebas, quàm conitrus existeret: sed nec erat qui prægnantem igneo foetu nubem videret. Hoc Fabio Romano superior, quod ejus fulmina in nube cudi ante partum Annibal deprehendit: tua nemo nisi ex ictu & cineribus post ictum agnovit. Fortitudo consiliis par. Vis animi acris, impetus vehemens, constantia pertinax. Belli discrimina sic expendebas, ceu timeres: sic subibas, ceu temneres. Objecta menti pericula cavebas, perinde ac odisses, re oblatâ accipiebas, perinde ac amares. Ante pericula cautus, in periculo interritus. Temerarius sæpè viderere, nisi ante prævidisses. Scienter cum Pyrro locum castris capere; peritè cum Camillo aciem instruere, alacriter cum Papyrio in hostem ire, promptè cum Rutiliano dimicare, acriter cum Philone urgere, pertinaciter cum Levino instare, graviter cum Manlio cadere, penitus cum Cæsare profligare. His artibus primum in Anglia, privatus Dux te apud Imperatores probasti, Cæsonem, Sicinium, Scævam, Attilium secutus: sed ita ut te in summam belli positam esse intelligerent: ac unde tu irueres, inde incepturam victoriam existimarent. Parendum tibi primum fuit: ut disciplinam ad munus Imperatorium, quod statim eras obiturus afferres: nec id beneficium datum à Republica, sed præmium virtuti redditum videretur. Et verò quâ tu peritiâ, quâ audaciâ; quâ constantiâ, apud Edghillum cum hoste pugnasti: ut hujus confessione cum hoste primas in eâ comparandâ victoriâ tuleris, & fortissimi Ducis laudem comparaveris. Quid? quod apud Marstonimorium, atrocissimo commisso prælio partem hostium pugnacissimorum quæ tibi obtigerat strenuè dimicando cecidisti, fugasti: & reductis à cursu copiis, partem aliam hostium, quæ alterum tuorum cornu protriverat in-

regum

tegrum ferocemque profligasti. Fabio Maximo similis, cum servato Minutio Annibalem: ac Metello, cum recepto Pompejo Sertorium superavit. Bruto superior, qui apud Philippos debilitato Octaviano Antonium de Cassii copiis victorem frangere aut omisit, aut non potuit: atque adeo allatâ sibi morte imperfectæ victoriæ pœnas dedit. Vnus tu Dux omnibus par copiis fuisti, quod neminem in iis parem habuisti. Iam verò clarissima Naës byfieldensis à Te pugната pugna illi ad Regillum lacum à Posthumio, & illi ad Leuctram ab Epaminondâ commissæ similis evasit: in quâ eximii Ducis, & fortissimi Bellatoris specimen præbuiisti. Nec te magis hostium Imperatores timebant, quàm amabant & colebant tui. Terrorem incutiebas hostibus, apud Tuos gratiam colligebas. Ferreum te ac Ferum ii appellitabant, tui cereum ac mitem dicebant. Inter metum & amorem positus: his amabilis, illis terribilis videbaris. Erat non minus mirabilis virtus tua, quod formidanda hostibus, quam quod tuis invidiosa non erat. Nunquam eminentia invidiâ carent. Gravius certè periclitatur apud domesticos summa virtus quàm apud hostes. Hi cæduntur & pereunt: illi accenduntur & perimunt. Hi in acie tantum nocere possunt: illi in pace officiant. Hi victi gloriam augment: illi invidi minuunt. Ab illis vis, telum, & insidiæ, quæ vitari possunt timendæ sunt. Ab illis fraus, astus, & doli qui vix possunt averti. Ab hoste armis qui satis munitus ac tutus: ab æmulo ne innocentia quidem. Verùm ea virtutis tuæ felicitas fuit, Clarissime Imperator, ut invisâ nemini, omnibus gratiosa extiterit. Admirationem attulit, invidiam extinxit. Magnitudinem rerum gestarum admirabantur, quam cum assequi non possent, non invidebant: quod nemo in videre solet, nisi ei quem æmulari posse confidit. At quis extra omnem virtutis aleam positum æmulari, imitative au-

deret? Quanquam quis invideret ei qui pro Republicâ pug-  
nabat? cujus facinora è Republica erant? An sibi quisque  
suisve invidet? Cum omnes ejusdem Reipublicæ membra  
essent, non poterant civem, per quem stabat florebatque  
Respublica invidiæ insectari? Quid? quod modestia & tem-  
peratio materiam auferebat invidiæ? Plerunque eminentis  
cujusque excellentia voluntatem alienat, & ansam præbet  
invidiæ. Qui moderatè ac modestè se gerit, uti conciliat  
amorem, ita avertit invidentiam; nemo carus invidiam pa-  
titur. Tu omnibus amabilem te modestiâ & temperatione  
præbebas. Nihil tibi arrogabas, nihil aliis detrahebas. Fa-  
cta tibi vendicabas, famam cæteris relinquebas. Tibi peri-  
cula, gloriam reliquis reservabas. Nihil erat invidendum  
in eo qui nihil gloriosum retinebat, imò qui gloriam in eos  
qui invidere poterant, transferebat. In locum invidentiæ  
gratia transibat, cum translatâ in alterum gloria hic pro be-  
neficio gratias agere referreque debuisset. Duo sunt quæ  
hominibus ad culmen honoris grassantibus munire viam  
& aditum parare solent: summa virtus & summa gratia:  
Nam etsi virtus ad merendum satis, non sufficit tamen ad  
habendum. Cum enim accipiendi honores sint à Repu-  
blica qui Cives erga se benevolos non habeat, is eos com-  
parare non poterit. Nihil sane ad virtutem defuit Aristidi  
Athenis: nihil Cleomeni Lacedæmone, nihil Coriolano,  
Metello, Sertorio Romæ: quia tamen gratiâ populi desti-  
tuti, partim inglorii vitam agitarunt, partim exuti honori-  
bus laborarunt infamiâ. Contra Pericles & Cimon apud  
Athenienses; Brasidas & Agesilaus apud Lacedæmonios;  
Camillus, Scipiones, Marius, Sylla, Pompejus apud Ro-  
manos, quod magnâ gratiâ floruerunt, honores sunt am-  
plissimos in Republica consecuti. Sanè uti virtus propria,  
ita gratia aliena: atque adeò in parte felicitatis ponenda:  
quæ

quæ non est in potestate virtutis. Neutrum certè in Cromwello desiderandum. Perspecta in eo virtus: Gratia apud omnes explorata: sed quam ei virtus peperisset. Eò spectatior quòd benevolentia merita sequeretur. Itaque ad summos Reipublicæ honores evehi cæpit, prærogativâ singulari, quòd à maximo nostræ ætatis Imperatore Farface, apud quem vera virtus valebat, commendatus, & à Republica in ejus est locum substitutus: Magna gloria utriusque Farfacis, quòd non metuit, ne splendore successoris luminibus obstrueretur suis. Cromwelli, quòd non dubitavit tanti Imperatoris virtuti & expectationi respondere, Majore felicitate Respublicæ quæ duos sortita est Cives, quorum alter ambitione major, deponebat & transferebat Imperium: alter fortunâ superior translatum fidenter accipiebat. Alter contemptor dignitatis: alter conscius virtutis. Ambo Patriæ amantes: Ille reddendo munus; hic redditum sustinendo. Felix Anglia duobus Civibus fulta stetit: cum multæ ac præclaræ Respublicæ à duobus Civibus sint everse, & labefactatæ. Hannonis & Hannibalis contraria studia Carthaginem perdiderunt. Romanam Remp. primùm Marius & Sylla; deinde Pompejus & Cæsar dissentientes inter se & æmuli sustulerunt. Farfax & Cromwell Angliam immortali sui nominis gloria consecrarunt. Cæteri quippe perverso ambitionis affectu Remp. ad se trahere: hi recto in Patriam amore, se suaque Reipublicæ tradere studuerunt. Invenit intra se Anglia Atlantem & Herculem, humeris æquis, constantiâ pari, dato & accepto onere Reipublicæ concordēs, & stabiles: in quibus non nutaret Patria, sed firma immobilisque consisteret. Suscepto militari Imperio, ceu Fortunam in Castris haberes, ita tria Regna continenti victoriarum cursu peragrasti. At quæ Regna? illa sane quæ à reliquo velut orbe divisa, secum habi-



habitans, & connexa suo se vinculo continent, ac tuentur: clausa mari, in via terris, viris, armis referta, ac prorsus adversus vim externam oppugnationesque munita. Hic illa Hybernia tota horrida, & militaris, spiritu scæta bellico, eructans arma armatosque. Hic illa Scoria, situ & ingenio aspera, indomitæ gentis domicilium, Martialis palæstra: in quâ durissimi bellatores ad belli discrimina eruditi, vel ipso Caledoniæ nomine horrendum quiddam & abstrusum sonante terribilis. Hic illa Anglia Generosa tellus, Heroum Procreatrix, Palmarum Regio, Laurorum sedes, Cumulus Trophæorum; cujus montes ac Promontoria captorum de multiplici hoste spoliolum fascibus coronantur. Hæc tot Imperatoribus in via, invicto uni tibi Cromwell pervia, domita subactaque cesserunt. Passu alius levis, expeditus, inermis, tam citò peragrarè vix posset, quàm tu gravis armis, impeditus copiis, distentus præliis circuisti. Quod Cæsari semel accidit præ celeritate venire, videre, vincere; majore tibi sæpius gloriâ contigit; cum ille in ignavissimos & fugacissimos: tu in audacissimos & pertinacissimos hostes incidisses; cum his si Cæsar demicarit, sudaret profectò, nec fortè vicisset: Tu si cum illis bellares, ne vidisses quidem, quod antè fugissent. Et verò Cæsaris victoria intra fortunam fuit: tua intra virtutem. Nullum non à te prælium citra periculum susceptum, sine discrimine initum. Pudebat te Palmæ inertis ac mollis. Innocentiam cum amares, innocentes pugnas fastidiebas: nec Trophæa incruenta placebant. Indecorus ac scædus redire, unde non sanguinem, sordes qui bellici pulveris referres, videbare. In bellis scilicet Fulmen agebas. Tuum erat ibi ferire, ubi durities ac vis ad resistendum erat. Indignum putabas ceden-  
tia & blanda lædere. Dura & indomita quærebans. Qui de-  
licias domi adversabare, qui delicatâ foris victoriâ oblecta-  
re?

rere? Et verò ceu Tibi ad nutum obtemperaret Fortuna, maxima praelia quassavit, in quibus cum acerrimis hostibus dimicares: ut ubi virtus se eximia tua exerceret, & quanta vis esset victoris, fuis validissimis & maximis copiis apparet. Testor, ut alia omittam, Dumbarrense illud memorabile praelium, in quo instructissimos exercitus Ducibus militibusque ferocibus abundantes, collectis undique è Scotia viribus formidabiles, animis viribusque fidentes aggressus, dissipasti, fudisti: ea virtute, qua Darii Miltiades ad Marathonem: Xerxis Pausanias ad Plateas: Gallorum ad Alliam Camillus: Romanorum ad Cannas Annibal: Carthaginensium Livius, & Nero ad Metaurum Fluvium copias dissiparunt. Tanta ejus praelii strages fuit, ut non modò cadaverum cumuli campum oppleverint, sed ii etiam sanguine stagnerint; nec sola corpora pugnantium, verùm totius quoque gentis animi ceciderint. Ea enim vera victoria æstimanda est, quæ ultra pugnam tenditur: & superstites quoque exarmat, & exanimat, ac ex acie in regionem procedit; & famâ civitates, conventus, oppida ad deditionem compellit. Multò plus agit tonitrus, quàm fulmen. Innumera oppida, castella, arces, urbes, hoc nuntio, ceu tormento ictæ, in Anglorum potestatem venerunt. Quanta vis Fulminis, cujus Tonitrus tanta vehementia ferebatur! Vna tamen Civitas Edinburga fortissima, frequentissima, munitissima, Arce propè inexpugnabili moram currenti victoriæ asferre voluit. Sed conspecto Cromwelle, obstupuit & cessit. Arx sola restitit, situ, munitione, præsidio nixa. Nimirum nova Imperatori tanto militaris materia Laudis parabatur. Ars & peritia oppugnandi & expugnandi, magni certè semper apud Principes Duces habita fuit. Valet, quippe ingenio & constantiâ, & duriore virtute Patientiâ. Sanè qui in acie pugnat, uno tantum veluti

pari par, & cum aperto apertus pugnat hoste; qui oppi-  
 dum arcemve oppugnat, impar superiorem, apertus te-  
 ctum & rutum hostem aggreditur: nec cum eo tantum sed  
 cum turribus & propugnaculis, imò & sæpè cum incom-  
 modis, difficultatibus, temporibus ac elementis confligit;  
 Igitur novam virtutis bellicæ occasionem nactus, quantus  
 in omni militaris peritiæ genere fores Cromwell Amplissi-  
 me, demonstrasti. Tam scienter, tamque fortiter Arcem  
 oppugnasti, ut quamquàm se pertinacissimè hostis defen-  
 deret, brevi in tuam potestatem redegeris. Camillum ad  
 Vejós, Lyfandrum ad Athenas, Alexandrum ad Petram,  
 Annibalem ad Suguntum, Scipionem ad Numantiam, Cæ-  
 sarem ad Alexiam victor expugnatâ Edinburgâ representa-  
 sti. Eodem momento decussæ è coronâ murorum pennæ,  
 & cætera circumjecta oppida subacta. Non plura post Can-  
 nensem cladem ad Hanibalem: pauciora ad Scipionem,  
 debellatis ad Carthaginem Novam Pœnis, defecerunt,  
 quàm expugnatâ Edinburga Cromwelli sese dediderunt.  
 Tot eam quasi appendices secutæ Arces. Quarum nomina  
 si nanciscerentur Scriptores Romani, ex horrore soni plau-  
 sum quærerent. Iactarunt enim incondita quædam voca-  
 bula insolentius, ut exaggerarent sonorum asperitate victo-  
 rias. Corniculum, Crustumarium, Eretam; Corbionem,  
 Sattrivulum, Anxur, Verruginem, Gessoriacum in ore ha-  
 buerunt. Quanto horridiora sunt Kebbrigetium, Rost-  
 bandum, Sithgras, Tantalón, Craufordium, Barthwic-  
 kum; Blaknessum, Dougla, Dunda, & alia uti in Scotia &  
 Caledonia metuenda. Quin ex ipsius Regni nominibus ali-  
 quid arriperent ad Ducum suorum famam augendam. In  
 Scotiâ enim tenebricosum quiddam invenirent, unde lu-  
 cem accenderent: in Caledonia Sylvarum densa, & abstru-  
 sa frigerent, in quibus Monstra Calydonio Apro ferociora  
 sævi-

favirent, ad novos sibi Meleagros fingendos. Sane majus quiddam fabuloso illo Heroë in Te O Cromwell reperissent, qui unus tot hostium immanissimorum copias debellasset. Pullulabant Palmæ, quæ tuæ victrices copię incedebant. Eminent illa Fifania Palmaria Romanis Triumphis digna, quam Samniacis & Nolanis, Vejentareis, Cimbricisque anteponam. In ea quippe cruenta pugna auspiciis tuis, Ductu Lamberti Fortissimi & Maximi Ducis: (quem tibi superi & clarum Aripone singulari beneficio comites dederunt) acerrimos hostium Duces, strenuissimos milites veræ & solidæ virtutis nervis tui fregerunt: & non modo Scotis arma & opes, sed spem quoque ipsam vincendi resistendique ademerunt. Ad eam tu victoriâ comparandam præclaro facinore viam aperuisti: trajecto felici audaciâ freto illo Forthio: in quo sane tranando expectationem omnium superasti, & admirationem tui hostibus attulisti; nec te aut in trajectu Rodani Annibal, aut Rheni Cæsar, aut Araxis Augustus superavit. Frœnos indomito illi & feroci freto imposuisti, quos momordit illud, & spumas egit vel invitum: nec Xerxis compedes desiderasti, quod illud fortius ac vehementius subegisti. Visæ sunt impatienter ferre Armatos undæ, & indignari oneri: & cum non possent excutere, dolere ac fremere, ac horribili sono Fifaniam stragem portendere. Ad extremum illud & maximum, in quo de summa rei Scoti dimicarunt, prælium venio. Illud inquam Vigornianum, omnibus totius antea ætatis acerrimis comparandum: Nam neque apud Mantineam Thebani cum Lacedæmoniis, neque apud Zamam Annibal cum Scipione, neque in Pharsalicis campis Pompejus cum Cæsare, neque apud Mutinam cum Antonio Consules, neque apud Philippos cum Augusto & Antonio Brutus & Cassius acrius & pertinacius dimicarunt. Collegerant undique

opes, copias, vires Scoti, & spe novâ, & desperatione antiquâ: spes accendebat, desperatio irritabat; ex illa animi, ex hac iræ: qui stimuli ad pugnandum acres. Ultimam jacere aleam parati vehementius incumbabant. Pro Regno primùm & Patria, deinde pro honore, tandem pro salute pugnaturi. In discrimen sanè afferrent Anglicam rem nisi in Cromwellem incidissent. Hic eorum conatus elusit, impetus fregit, vires attrivit, copias dissipavit, & uno prælio bellum omne confecit. Agesilai, Scipionis, Cæsaris virtutem & fortunam assecutus. Nemo unquam te, Clarissime Imperator, peritius aciem instruxit, nemo alacrius induxit milites, nemo ardentius hostem invasit, nemo constantius repressit, nemo vehementius repulit, nemo fortius cecidit, nemo violentius impulit, nemo latius fudit, fugavit, dispersit: nemo felicius superavit. Hâc una victoriâ subegisti Scotiam, domuisti Hyberniam, liberaisti Angliam, Remp. recreasti, statuisti, confirmasti. Patuit eâ die tantum in te peritiæ rei militaris, esse ut scias: tantum virtutis ut possis: tantum felicitatis ut debeas, cum velis hostem vincere. Omnia quæ industriæ sunt, in potestate tua esse: Fortunam, quæ sui juris est, tibi uni se addixisse: Visam alibi imperare, in castris tuis servire: & quæ supercilio suo bella suspendit, tuo nutui obedire. Equidem ego, omnium Annalium monumenta evolvens, sex fermè tantùm ab orbe condito Imperatores reperi, qui cum plurima maximaque gessissent bella, ex omnibus victores semper evaserint: nec unquam adversam pugnando fortunam experti fuerint. Alexandrum, Camillum, Scipionem, Cæsarem, Belisarium, Scanderbecum: quibus addam proximis annis Gustavum Adolphum Magnum illum, & Magnæ Christinæ Patrem. Debemus hoc ætati nostræ, O Cromwell, quod te tulerit, vel debet illa tibi, quod te illi præstiteris invictum, & sex illis septemve adden-



addendum, ut queniadmodum septem sunt Artis miranda, ira & totidem sint virtutis: Imò & septem illis tu unus additus, octavum efficias: & omnium sis unus compendium, quod omnia & sustineas: & repræsentes. Est in te quippe Magnanimitas Alexandri, virtus Camilli, Constantia Scipionis, vis Cæsaris, Peritia Belisarii, Fortitudo Scanderbechi, impetus, si placeat, Gustavi: ut in quibus singuli præstiterint, iis tu omnibus excellas: nec in Cromwell jam Imperatoris tantum nomen; sed virtutis etiam, ac felicitatis esse videatur. Verum enim verò bellicæ laudes, etsi splendida magis ac speciosæ, atque adeò ad pompam comparatæ sint; non ideò tamen solidiores ac præstantiores sunt, quàm quæ virtutum operibus continentur: in quibus exercendis major est, quàm in militaribus difficultas: cum aliis alios, his autem nosmet ipsos vincamus. Quæ tanto est victoria clarior: ut summi quidam Oratores dixerint: qui alios superarent hominibus, qui se ipsos vicerint, Deo fore similes. Certè qui virtutibus abundat, is, etsi bellicis laudibus careat, prodesse Reip. potest: ac sibi togati ac optimi Civis gloriam comparare. Cujusmodi fuerunt in Græcia Socrates & Plàto: Romæ Cato & Cicero. Verum qui eis dux careat, quamvis militari excellat gloriâ, sæpe nocebit Reip. & nomini suo labem asperget: Imò vix optimi Ducis officium præstare poterit. Nam si cupidus aut avarus sit, nec stipendia militibus cum fide solvet, nec à latrociniiis abstinebit ipse, nec avertet suos: & si quid jure belli ceperit: vendicabit sibi, nec militibus distribuet: quod quàm est sordidum, & ab integritate, splendoreque alienum? Si superbus & iracundus: sæpè in suos crudelis, in alios immanis existet, ac ex amicis inimicos, ex inimicis hostes reddet; nemini charus, omnibus invisus existet: at non modò hostium in se iram, sed etiam suorum in se invidiam

diam concitabit. Si ventri penique deditus: Luxuria luxuque frangetur, vim remittet, nervos incidet militiæ, & maſtandum ſe hoſti inertis modo pecoris dabit. Si fidei ac religionis negligens: neminem ſibi fidum inveniet: neminem in officio continebit. Ecquis enim perfido ſervet fidem, & impii legibus præceptiſque obtemperet? Ab huiusmodi certè ducibus non magis timere hoſtis, quàm cavere ſibi Reſp. debet. Ejuſmodi fuit Lacedæmone Lyſander: Piſiſtratus & Alcibiades Athenis: Romæ Marcus Manlius, Marius, Cinna, Carbo, Sylla, Antonius: qui etſi bello Clariffimi Duces, Patriæ tamen pernicioſiſſimi cives extiterunt. Alii verò qui ſummi Imperatores & fuerunt & habiti ſunt, etſi nihil incommodarint Reipublicæ, famam tamen nominis ſui maximè obſcurarunt. Quantum Alexandri gloriæ detraxit ebrietas & iracundia? Quantum Annibal perſidia & immanitas? Quantum Luculli Luxus & deliciæ? Quantum Appii Superbia & impudicitia? Illi autem qui & foris clari militari gloriâ, & domi virtutis laude fuerunt, non modò Remp. ſervarunt & auxerunt, verum etiam immortalem ſibi famam comparârunt: de quibus certè ſine quodam deſiderii ſenſu meminiffe non poſſumus. Quis enim Epaminondæ Thebani, Ageſilai Lacedæmonii, Themiftoclis Athenienſis, Philopœmenis Achæi, Dionis Syracuſani, Amilcaris Pœni, Camilli, Curii, Fabricii, Fabii, Scipionum, Pompeji vitam legens, eorumque virtutes ac rectè facta commemorans, non eos diligit, non colat, non requirât, & coràm intueri, alloquique deſideret? Tanta quippe vis eſt virtutis, ut exiſtimem non ſuis modò eos civibus caros, ſed hoſtibus quoque amabiles extitiſſe. Patrem ego te, imò & ſimilem dum animi tui virtutes doctesque intueor Ampliſſime Cromwell, iis quos recensui, aliſque, de quibus commemorare non potui, Ducibus eſſe exiſti-

mo.

mo. Tot enim in te confluxere, exque tantæ tamque præclaræ, ut de te ornando contendisse, ac cum te ornassent, de primatu inter se certasse viderentur. Ac primum eas virtutes, quæ ad coercendos pravos animi impetus motusque pertinent, inspiciamus. Nihil minus est in nostrâ potestate, quàm huiusmodi affectiones, quæ non modò invitis, sed ne opinantibus quidem nobis existunt, nosque perturbant, obruuntque interdum rationem & occupant arbitrium. Iis tu humanæ conditionis vitio non poteras non esse obnoxius, nec aliquando non succumbere; sed ita te plerumque continebas, ut cum naturæ nihil detraheres multum certè vitio auferres. Illud vigilando & obviam eundo obtinuisti; ut cum intra te configeres, indicia pugnæ feras non prodirent: ac vix in te quisquam perturbati animi signa deprehenderet. Ecquis te unquam superbia elatum? Ecquis irâ ardentem? Ecquis cupiditate inflammatum vidit? nec deerant sæpe homini imperanti, dimicanti, vincenti occasiones: sed in iis tamen ita te gerebas, ut nemini magis quàm tibi imperares. Iubendo rationi, pugnando moderationi, vincendo temperantiæ parebas. Qui alios in potestate habebas, quòd cum iis moderate ageres, in eorum potestate esse videbaris. Priùs tibi imperasti, quàm militi quicquam injunxisti. Ante iracundiam compressisti, quàm aut errantem emendasti, aut scelera tum punisti. Præparato ac purgato à cupiditatibus animo, libidinem à te & avaritiam removisti. Ad eas quæ erga alios exercentur virtutes prudentiam Ducem adhibere solitus es; Nec modò quid cuique deberetur, sed quid te deceret, quid aliis congrueret inspiciebas: nec id tantum, quod justum erat, præstabas; sed quod æquum & honestum exhibebas. Removere injuriam, vim repellere, fluxam virtutem putabas. Sublevare miserum, afflictum recreare, egenum ditare, vo-  
rum

rum ac solidum virtutis genus ducebas. Nam vitium fugere exigua laus : magna honestatem sectari, & virtutem augere. Nec solum odio in vitia laudari, sed amore in virtutes commendari volebas. Equidem à vitiis longissimè aberas, ad honesta proximà accedeabas : adeò ut penè in earum spatia penetrando ad extrema pervenires, ac nisi huc vitiosa forent, omninò pertransires. Nam ea erat magnitudo animi, ut vel in virtutibus mediocritatem quodammodo non patereris, ne quid modicum, sectari viderere. Quare quemadmodum in Circo, ita curriculum conficiebas, ut prope metas accederes, & stringeres ; eas tamen evitares ; ut qui currentem vidiſſet, is nosset magnanimitatem ad extrema superanda non deesse ; obesse vitium, ne transires. In mediis turò, in extremis periculose versabaris, quod velles exhaurire virtutem. Itaque fortitudo tua propè temeraria, liberalitas pene prodiga, integritas propè severa : patientia pene duritia, constantia propè obstinatio ; temperantia pene fastidium. Placebant homini generoso, virtutes in confinio vitiòrum positæ : ut ea quasi hostes comminus insectaretur : eaque velut ex propinquo provocaret, ac ex edito virtutis fastigio insultaret. Eam es opinionem consecutus, ut non tam tu fugere vitia, quam te fugere vitia viderentur ; majusque tibi gloriæ momentum ex superatis vitiis, quàm ex multis hostibus accedere. In summa militari licentia nihil tibi licuit, nisi quod licitum esset. Nihil collibuit, nisi quod honestum. Milites, non vi & imperio, sed exemplo in officio continuisti. Scriptæ erant in vultu tuo leges militares ; aspectu ipso tacitæ ferebantur. Feriabantur voces, ubi opera documento erant. Nunquam stipendia militibus defuerunt, quòd de tuis tu remitteres ad ea implenda. Quibus nihil deerat, si in te aliquid desiderabant. Non eos tantum moderatos, sed abstinentes reddidisti. Primus religionem  
in

in aciem intulisti, & bellare adversus vitia & cupiditates in suo maximè regno milites docuisti: ut jam illud in exercitu tuo mirabile esse desinat, quod in Annibalis omnes mirabile fuisse prædicant, caruisse seditionibus. Nam in Punico exercitu duce Annibale, quòd vitia fuerint, seditiones etsi non fuerint, esse tamen certè potuerunt; in tuo quòd vitia defuerint, dissensiones ac tumultus esse non potuerunt. Sane qui singuli intra se vitiis non dissidebant, eorum in castris non potuit esse dissidium. Is demum Imperator hostes sciet perdere, qui suos servare sciat. Nemo Imperator militum, quàm tu amantior. Amabas foris in acie, ut liberos, intus, domi. Invigilabas eorum incommodis, necessitates inquirebas, præveniebas preces, antevertebas gemitus; dolere ex tuis quisquam potuit, queri certè haud potuit. Iacebat fortuito ictu saucius miles: desiliebas equo, accedebas, aderas, & partem doloris in te transferebas. Si decrat culcitra, chlamydem ei tuam substernebas, omni plumâ ob affectum molliorem. Sæpè brachia quod chlamydem alteri dederas offerebas; & acceptum pectori applicabas, ac nobilius insito ex amore cordis pulsu animabas. Non majore impetu equum in hostem ad exitium adhibebas, quàm ad militis salutem reducto freno convertebas. Quoties hic pene ex animis ac deficiente sanguine frigidus, ferventes circa se currus tui rotas, ac excussas in se charitatis scintillas sensit! Quoties animam agens, & exitum crebro ac interciso anhelitu quærens, vidit se spiritu incubantis tui afflari: ut si victurus esset, partem animæ tibi deberet: Si moriturus, partem animæ tuæ secum auferret. In Armorum palæstrâ Amoris documenta dedisti. In hostes ardebas irâ, in tuos charitate flagrabas. In acie manum ad eadem, in castris ad vitam erudiebas. Hostem neminem, nisi dum tecum, & odium & arma exercebat, judicasti. Nec tam in



eo vitam auferres, quàm vitium, quod tolleres, insectabaris. Pugnantem & vinci nolentem urgebas, opprimebas; cadentem & victum sublevabas, fovebas. Nil tam tibi invisum, quàm rapinæ & incendia. Ultra mortem in privatum, ultra deditionem in publica sævire nefas duxisti. Dedisti volebas oppida, non expugnari; Integra servari ac reddi, quàm dirui ac deripi malebas. Triumphalis Imperator, sed citra ruinam oppidorum, Erecta in Trophæum servabas. Hospides ex hostibus sæpè reddidisti. Id tibi propositum, ne quis tibi nisi nocens periret: Præstabat nocentibus parci, quàm per eos innocentes peti. Neminem aut odio privato reum, aut suspitione temeraria sceleratum fecisti, quò pœnas expeteres; imò innocentiam pluribus affinxisti, ut supplicia constituta evaderent. Cum summus esses veritatis amator, hæc una tibi simulatio placuit, quæ pietatem adstrueret. His virtutibus omnem apud hostes invidiam extinxisti, apud tuos amorem conciliaisti, apud omnes gratiam collegisti. Quod Pompejus ante ruinam Magnus, Neapoli in morbo gravissimo communis in se expertus est amoris argumentum, cum tota visa est cum eo civitas ægrotare, cum in columi reviviscere: id tibi certè gratulati sunt tui, cum post tot victorias periculosus te morbus appetiit: (ceu monere vellet hominem te esse, more triumphali,) cujus cum fama per universam Anglicam ditionem emanasset, tantus repente mœror omnium mentes invasit, ut tecum periclitari viderentur. Ægrotabas tu corpore, illi animis laborabant, ac nobilius malum reddebant: transferebant in animos, quod tu in membris patiebare. Nunquam magis procul à morte quàm vicinus fato: vivebas in omnium votis: nemo calculum Libitinæ adjecit; communi suffragio decreta vita est tibi, in quo sita erat salus Reipublicæ. Nec tu illà incolumi perire poteras, nec illa te mortuo

tuo vellet vivere. Apparuit cum ægrotasti, quàm ex te vita penderet omnium. Feliciùs in morbum incidisti, quàm ex eo cæteri convaluerunt. Ne occulto quidem voto salus tua damnata. Inerat animis religio, ne quis auderet, quod contra Remp. erat, optare. Factum tibi est meliùs: liberatus periculo omnes mœrore levasi: ceu radiis à sole undique diffusis lætatur Orbis, ita disseminatis de salute tuâ rumoribus, exhilarata est Anglia. Fervebant gratulationibus urbes, Arces, oppida, castella, pagi: Vbique lætitia, plausus, ludi agitabantur. Summi infimique gestiebant: cives militesque juxta tripudiabant, triumphabant. Pro se quisque superis gratias agebat, ceu illa recuperata valetudo ad se pertineret. Nec poterat quisquam lætitiâ arguere, cujus manifesta in vultibus signa eminebant. Id cum per se magnum esset, majus tamen quiddam portendere videbatur. Eum nempe virum, cujus & ægritudo & salus tantopere commoveret Remp. privati civis modum fortunamque egressum, summam rerum administraturum: sed ita tamen ut ex sententia & voluntate Populi susceperet ac gereret, ut non sibi usurpare, sed civibus reddere imperium videretur. Quod tunc vota optabant, ac mentes præfagiebant, superi tibi, Imperator Cromwell, re præstiterunt. Non tu Marii instar, & Syllæ, Cæsarise, occupasti pervertistisque Remp. publicam; Nec assertam ac liberatam uti Brutus & Cassius deseruisti: nec specie tuendæ conservandæque, quemadmodum Augustus & Tiberius, ad te summam rerum transtulisti: sed annuentibus superis, vocantibus civibus, consensu maximo totius populi ad culmen militaris Imperii evectus ascendisti, non raptim, non violenter, non temere: sed lente & paulatim per gradus & munerum & virtutum, ut servares non perderes, ut augeres non deprimeres, ut amplificares non imminueres. Pater patriæ, ad ejus

salutem gloriamque natus ac institutus. Hoc animo ad eum accessisti, hoc illam suscepisti, hoc hactenus administrafti, ac deinceps geres administrabisque. Non tu ambitione fortunam corrumpes: non cupiditate virtutem pervertes: non impotentia justitiam opprimes: non invidia amorem civium extingues: non infamia gloriam obscurabis. Nemo sibi à Te unquam nisi hostis timuit: nihil à Te cives quos amasti, & à quibus amaris & coleris, timere potuerunt. Nec metu eos tantum sed & suspicione liberaisti, cum Parlamentum ex gravissimis ac potentissimis civibus constans, quod minus imperabat populariter, & ad suum arbitrium revocabat summam Reipublicæ, dissolvisti. Nec ejus Magistratus, aut antiquitatis, aut potentia, aut opum aut felicitatis rationem, sed juris & moderationis & fidei habere voluisti. Nec in eo quantum posset, quid valeret. quæ patrasset; sed an ea potentia, illæ opes, illa gesta, è Republica essent, spectasti. Deprehendisti quædam perpetuæ dominationis indicia, quod vellent semel acceptum imperium retinere, privatis magis studiis quàm communi sensu populi administrationem rerum publicarum gerere: Obligatam Patriæ fidem de eligendis ex omnium Provinciarum numero Senatoribus minimè præstitisse: nec deinceps præstitutos prævidisti: plures in iis Cæsari qui retinuit, quàm Syllæ qui deposuit dictaturam, similes reperisti, amore virtutis Patriæque incensus advolasti; &, quod res alex & periculi plena erat, arma juri adjunxisti, & Imperatoria autoritate ingressus Curiam expositis mutationis causis, Senatores domum abire jussisti, & Parlamentum ingens, frequens, copiosum, grave momento sustulisti. Non ego hic aut magnanimitatem, aut prudentiam, aut celeritatem, aut felicitatem, sed jus, fidem, studium libertatis considero; atque eò mentem refero, quo me ducit Reipublicæ amor & patriæ cha-

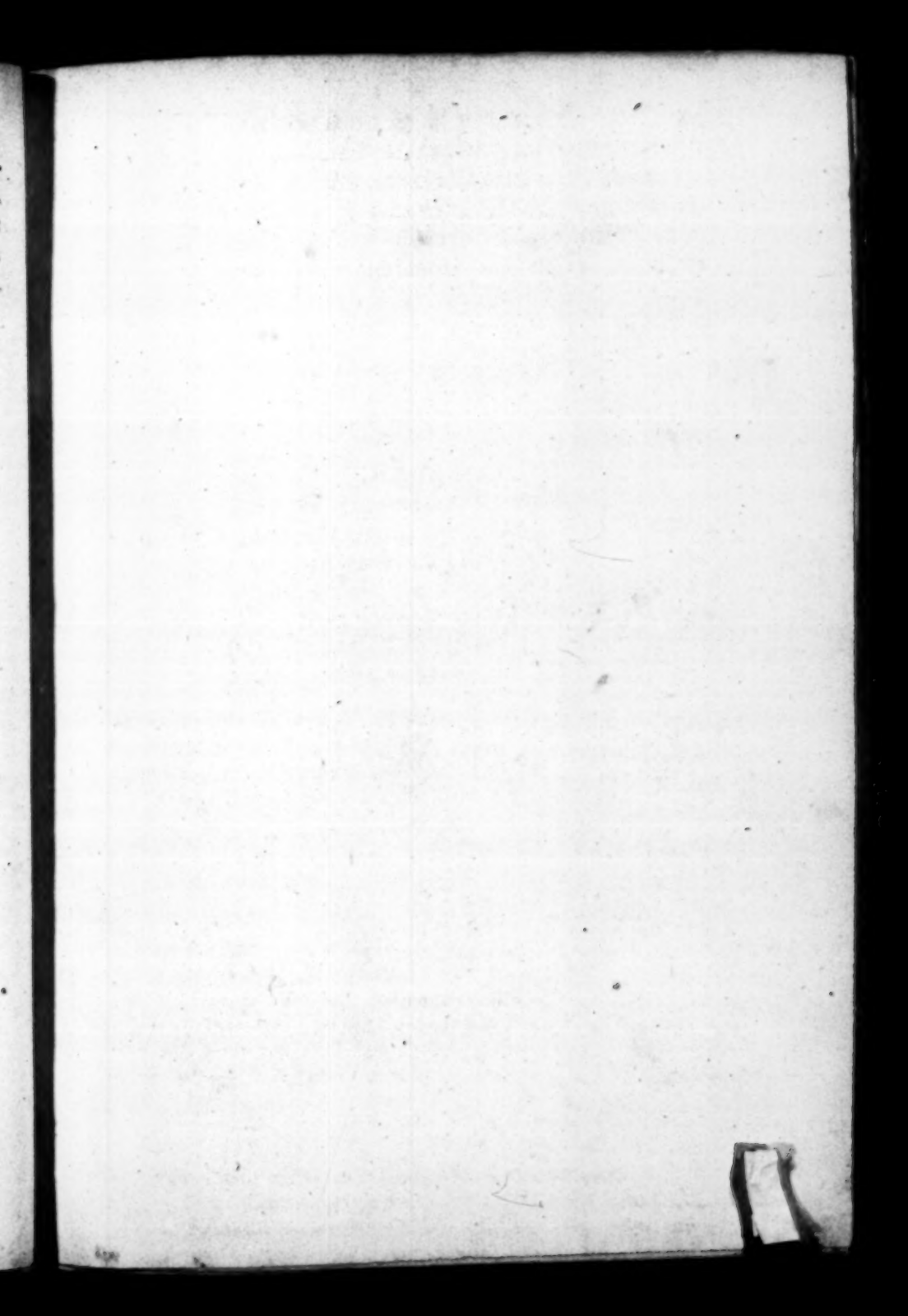
charitas. Nil timendum est ab eo cive, qui se Iuris vindicem, Fidei assertorem, ambitionis everforem, impotentiz expulforem præbuit. Ab omni suspitione liberandus is, qui tunc cum alios exegit, ea vitia voluit extirpare, quæ in detrimentum Reipublicæ vergebant. Sanè illis omninò carere oportuit, qui tam acriter ea est infectatus: nec deinceps obnoxius esse poterit, cùm in aliis vindicabit. Cujus arma innoxia & vis moderata, ejus non poterit esse metuendum Imperium. Innocentius in pace ager qui militiam sine culpa transegit. Qui Paludatus ab injuriâ abstinuit, is Togatus Institiam colet: Qui militarem licentiam coërcuit, is civilem moderationem servabit. Qui de hostibus benè meritus fuit, is de Patria malè mereri non poterit. In te uno Cromwell Imperator Amplissime, opes, fortunæ, spes Angliæ fixæ sunt: quo nihil majus unquam aut optare, aut cogitare ausus est quisquam. In te omnium civium ora oculique coniecti: summa est de Te ubique expectatio. Non Angliâ modo, sed Europa etiam tota, imo & universus orbis cogitationes ac suspiciones ad te suas convertit. Vnum te omnes intuentur & observant. Tibi posteritas omnis incumbit. Non modo gesta spectabunt tua, sed eorum quoque rationem exigent. Satisfacias oportet non tuæ tantùm conscientiæ, sed totius orbis expectationi, ac studio. Cujus Ideæ exemplum te probavi, ejus Heroïcas virtutes repræsentâ. Age magnitudine animi Alexandrum; militari peritiâ Pyrrhum: virtute Scipionem: autoritate Papyrium: ardore Marcellum: prudentia Fabium: solertiâ Annibalem: constantiâ Æmilianum: felicitate Cæsarem. Erga Cives Camillum, Pompejum, Agesi laum, Agidem, Epaminondam te gere. Erga hostes Brasidam, Lysandrum, Rutilianum, Metellum, Gylippum: Luctatium exhibe. Fide Regulum, abstinentiâ Fabricium, mo-

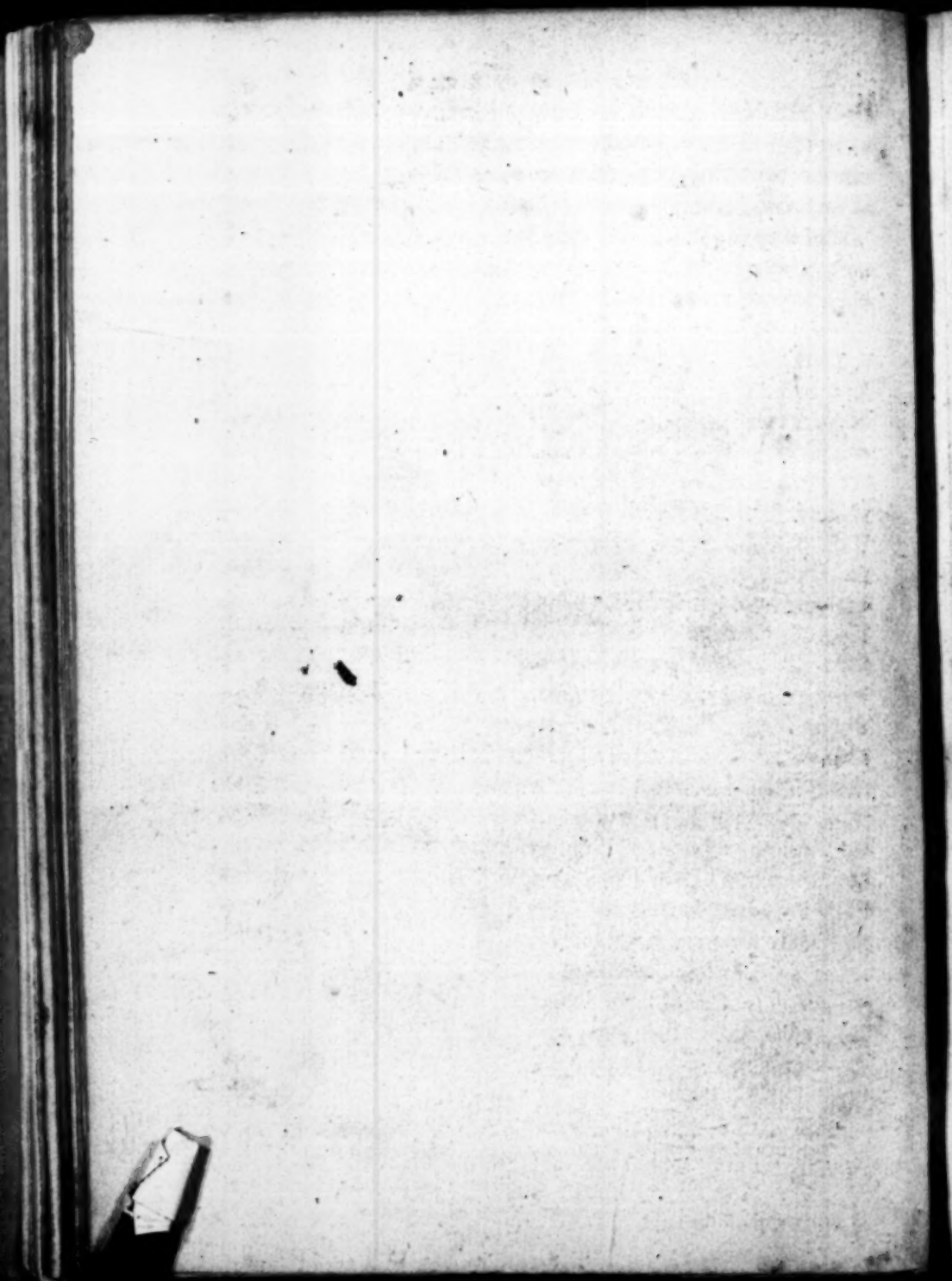
deratione Curium; integritate Catonem, patientia Themistoclem, gravitate Cimonem præsta. Vtar compendio. Te ipsum intueri. Vnus tu ad omnes exprimendas virtutes satis. Talem te gere, qualem hactenus gessisti. Is enim es qui nisi à Te delicias, malus esse non possis; si te imitere, non nisi Optimus esse possis.

• F I N I S.









Mene, Tekel, Perez,

OR,

A little Appearance of the  
H A N D - W R I T I N G

(In a Glance of Light)

Against the Powers and Apostates of the  
T I M E S.

By a Letter written to, and lamenting over

Oliver Lord Cromwel.

BY JOHN ROGERS.

In this woful Howre of his Temptation, and of  
Sins sore pangs, and Solemn Appeals; and of the precious Saints im-  
prisonments and persecution for this most Glorious, betrayed  
denied, and crucified Cause of Christ Jesus  
KING OF SAINTS AND NATIONS.

There *fin* is written with a Pen of Iron, and the point of a Diamond (ungue ada-  
mantino צדקין) whiles there Children remember their Altars and  
Groves, again. Jer. 17. 15.

Why do ye persecute me, as God? and are not satisfied with my flesh? oh that my  
Words were now written! oh that they were printed in a Book! that they were  
graven with an iron pen in the Rock for ever! For I know that my Redeemer  
liveth, and that he shall stand in the latter end upon the EARTH, &c. Job  
19. 22, 23, 24, 25, &c.

June. 10. 1654

Heu pietas! ubi prisca? profana o tempora! Mundi  
Fax: Vesper! prope Nox! o Mora! Christe Veni!  
Sinite Virgam Corripientem ne sentiatis Malleum Contemnitum. Bern.

Mrs. Pickel, Town

A little Appearance of the

# HAND-WRITING

(In a Glance of Light)

Against the Powers and Apparatus of the

World.

By a Lancet-writer, and pointing over

Other Parts of the



BY J. H. ROBERTS

In this world there is no other power, and of

which the world is made, and the world is made

of the world, and the world is made of the world.

of the world, and the world is made of the world.

KING OF SAINTS AND NATIONS.

The world is made of the world, and the world is made of the world.

The world is made of the world, and the world is made of the world.

The world is made of the world, and the world is made of the world.

The world is made of the world, and the world is made of the world.

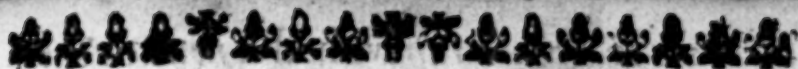
The world is made of the world, and the world is made of the world.

The world is made of the world, and the world is made of the world.

The world is made of the world, and the world is made of the world.

The world is made of the world, and the world is made of the world.

The world is made of the world, and the world is made of the world.



*A word by the way to the Reader,*



Ince the time that I was lately  
so illegally & arbitrarily plun-  
dered ( without any Cause  
shown or known ) by this  
Vnrighteous ( self-created ) pow-  
ers that is got uppermost ; I have with the  
words of *Jeremy*, Ch. 20. 8, 9. cryed out vio-  
lence and spoyl ! violence and spoyl ! because the  
word of the Lord is made a Reproach, and De-  
rision daily. Then I said, I will not make men-  
tion nor speak any more in his name ; But his  
word was in my heart as a burning fire shut up  
in my bones , and I was weary with forbearing,  
and I could not stay--But constrained in spirit  
wrote this Letter, yet seeing by several Mes-  
sengers I have assaied, and that several dayes  
together to get it delivered, and finding it so  
difficult, that it is doubtsfull whither it be safe-  
ly conveyed to him or no, you find it prin-  
ted, as the most probable means of having it  
presented to his eye, for that many Flate-

ters



ners are ready to run with the news to their Master, as v. 10. **REPORT**, say they, and we will **REPORT** it, all my Familiars watched for my halting, saying peradventure he wil be iniiced, and we shall **PREVAI** against him, and take our **REVENGE** on him. Well, if they do so, we come **CROSSE** of Christ! for my next Petition to thy Kingdom come! is thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven! yet who knows but this weak word may awaken him a little! For, *Ægros, quos potius fortis non curavit, ad salutem pristinam Aqua tepens revocavit*, warm water bath sometimes recovered men to their former health; but whither this doc or not, my Conscience is (now) so well satisfied, my heart be refreshed, and my spirit so warmed in the strength of our dear (despised) Christ, that I hope to go on with Jerem. 20. 11. For the Lord is with me, who is the terrible one; therefore my **PERSECUTORS** shall stumble, they shall not prevail, but they shal be greatly ashamed, for they **SHAL** not prosper (long) and their everlasting Confusion shall never be **FORGOTTEN**! this is the victorious, overturning, already triumphing Faith of 1000s (Blessed be **Jehovah** besides.)

JOHN: ROGERS.



MY LORD,

**VV** Hile the souls of many of the Lords dear *Servants* (who sit weeping over you) are in *Travel*, and struggle for you in this hour of *Temptation*. I most humbly beg (as upon my knees) for your own Soule, and Family, and for the poor afflicted Saints sake, that you will but weigh these few Lines of our present *Lamentation*, in the ballance of your heart and *Conscience* (one part of an hour which you may best spare and be most serious in) which (if the Lord, whom I serve) require it, I thinke I could as freely write with my *Blood*, as with *Irke*, in *tears* and *gall* of grief) O our bowels! our bowels! our hearts ake, and are pained within us, to hear the dolefull groans and cries! *tears*! *prayers*! and *solemne Appeals* of godly people in the *Nation* round about to the *Righteous Judge* of the whole *Earth*! which (doubtlesse) will be *Answered* with a dreadfull *Dispensation*, and severe *Decree* upon those that be found the *Enemies* to the Lord *Iesus*, and his *Exaltation*: The *Apprehension* whereof hath so ceased upon my Spirit, that I should sinne (if some way or other) I gave you no notice thereof, for that your own person is (yet) so deare in our very soules, that *Bowels* of *Affection* are frequently seen to you in mourning, praying, and wrastling for you (if possible) to recover you out of those bottomlesse *Snarres* wherein you are so deeply *insnarred* by the evill Counsell of *Parasites*, subtle and selfe seeking *Flatterers*, *Dawbers*, and *Deceivers*, who have not that lively *Sence* to the Lord *Iesus*, his poor *Saints*, and *Interest*, nor yet to your *Souls* (so desperately engaged we humbly conceive) as we who are counted enemies for the *Truths* sake (as the Lord will *Witness*) have: Of whom as 3 *Phil.* 18, 19 I have told you often, and now tell you againe even weeping, that they are enemies to the *Crosse* of *Christ*, whose end is *destruction*, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is their *shame*, Whom in earthly things, *Jeremiah* 9: vers. 1. 2. Oh that my head were waters, and mine eyes a *Fountain* of *tears*, that I might weep day and night for the slaine of the *Daughter* of my people, that I might leave my people, and goe from them; for they be all *Adulterers*, an *Assembly* of treacherous men. I cannot speak with you in person, therefore I beseech you read these words, which our tears and prayers are the *Embassadors*, and *Fore-runners* of *Adistamus proos & lachrymas cordis legatos* (*Cyprian*) for that we have not the least grain of ill will, hatred or malice (as some suggest and say) against any person, but only against the sins and evil of this change of government, which God wil (and if *Righteous* we are sure must) Judge and then, as once you said in your Letter to the *Kiske* of *Scotland*, God who knoweth us, Will in his due time

A

cat-

manifest whether we doe multipl. these things as men, or doe we them for the Lord Christ and his poor peoples sake. Wherefore

Your  
own De-  
clarati-  
ons,

Against  
absolute  
Govern-  
ment.  
in one  
Person.

For suc-  
cessive  
Parlia-  
ments.

1 Be pleased (we beseech you with weeping tears) to compare a little present transactions with former Inagagements, and with the Armies Declarations, &c. as that of June 14. 1647. in page 6. declaring that you tooke up Armes in Iudgement and Conscience for the peoples Just Right and Liberties, and Resolved to assest and vindicate them against all Arbitrary power, violence, and opposition; and against all particular parties, and interests whatsoever. So page 7. that it is no resisting of Magistracy, so side with those just Principles being these upon which you assisted the Parliament: And that the glory of God was not wanting in such cases to set a price upon such proceedings, it being one witness of God in the world to carry on a Testimony against the injustice and unrighteousness of men: And against the miscarriage of Governments, when corrupted and declining from the primitive and originall glory. So page 9. We are so farre from designing and complying to have an absolute arbitrary power signed or sealed for continuance in any PERSONS WHATSOEVER; as that (if we might be sure to obtaine it) We cannot wish to have it so in the PERSONS of any, Whom we (our selves) could most confide in, or who should appeare most of our PRINCIPLES and Opinions, or whom We might have most personall assurance of, or interest in: but that the Authority of this Kingdome in PARLIAMENTS may ever stand and have its course as the supream power and trust, with many other things in that Declaration. So in the case of the Army stated and proposed by the Agents from Gifford, Oct. 9. 1647. page 4. We take up Arms in Iudgement and conscience for the peoples Just Rights and Liberties, & not as mercenary soldiers hired to serve an arbitrary power. So page 13. 14. The people shall see we minded not our own interest, but the Good, Freedom, and Welfare of the whole Nation, which in the same page is declared particularly to be in new Successive Elections of Supream Assemblies of Parliaments at Periods of times, and that it ought not to be denied them, this being so Essentiall to their Freedom, that without it they are no better then SLAVES, that therefore is be insisted on so positively and resolutely, as not to RECED from it, So page 15. That PARLIAMENTS rightly constituted are the Foundation of our hopes of Right and Freedom to the people; that therefore the constant SUCCESSION of PARLIAMENTS be so resolutely insisted on that a law PARADOXONT be made for it. And whereas all power is originally and essentially in the people; and whereas their free choice or consent by the Representatives is the only originall and foundation of all Just GOVERNMENT, that is be insisted upon positively, that the supream POWER of the peoples REPRESENTORS in PARLIAMENT be forthwith declared for, as their power to make LAWS, or repeal Lawes, and to call to account all Officers in this Nation whatsoever. So page 15. This supream and sole Power in Parliament being the thing

thing against which the King contended, and which the people have defended with their lives, and therefore ought now to be demanded as the PRICE of their BLOOD. So page 17. The many oppressions of the people, and the danger of absolute tyrannie Were the occasion of the expense of so much blood, so that the people have bought these their Rights and Freedoms by the price of blood, &c. Since that the Remonstrance of St. Albans, 1648. pag. 14. 15. The summe of the publick Interest of a Nation to COMMON RIGHT and FREEDOME (which has been the chief subject of our contest) and in opposition to TYRANNIE and INJUSTICE of KINGS or others we take to lie in these things following.

Rights  
and free-  
dome  
where it  
lies.

1. That all Matters of supream trust or concernment to the safety and welfare of the whole, be in a common and supream Councell or Parliament, &c

1.

2. That the power of making Lawes, Constitutions, and Affairs (for the preservation and government of the whole) and of Altering or repealing, and abolishing, and power of small Judgements concerning Warre or Peace, the safety and welfare of the people, and all civill things whatsoever, and the supream Trust in relation to such things rest in that supream Councell of Parliaments. So as 1. the ordinary ordering and government of the people may be by such Offices and Administrations, and according to such Lawes and Rules as by that Councell or Representative have been prescribed or allowed, and not otherwise. 2. That no extraordinary or ordinary powers (as above mentioned) may be exercised towards the people by ANY (as of right) but by that supream Councell or Representative. nor without their advice and consent, may any thing be imposed on or taken from the people, or if it be otherwise attempted by ANY, that the people be not bound thereby but free. So page 16 That it may not be left in the wil of the KING, or any particular person whatsoever (standing in their own Interest) to oppose, make void, or render ineffectuall such determinations or proceedings. So page 21. 22. Where any person is trusted with a limited power, according to Lawes to preserve the Rights and Liberties of the people, and abuses of power to their hurt, or by the advantage of that power shall use to assume hurtfull powers, which they never committed to him, and indeed to take away all those Foundations of Right and Liberty, of Redresse and Remedy, and to swallow up all in his owne absolute will and power, to impose, take away, and destroy at pleasure, &c. Such person doth (if so fall) forfeit all that trust and power he had, &c. Further in p. 65. 66. That satisfaction & assurance be given that what they have contended for against the King (which is our humble suit now) for which we have been put to so much trouble, cost and losse of blood, hath been only for the Liberties and common Interest, and not for your personall Interest and Power; that there may be a sound settlement of the peace, and future government of the Kingdome upon grounds of common Right and Freedom, as followeth.

2.

1

2 3

They  
sought  
against  
personall  
Interest.



For Par-  
liaments  
Annuall  
or bi-  
annual.

I That there be a certaine succession of future Parliaments (Annuall or Biennuall) with secure provision, that none who have ingaged or shall ingage in warre against the right of Parliaments or Interest of the people therein, or have adhered to the enemies thereof may be capable of electing or being elected (at least during a competent number of years) nor any other who shall oppose or not joyn in agreement to this settlement; and that it be declared that such Representatives have and shall have the supreme Power and Trust. Besides [much more in these other Declarations] that upon the Armies march into Scotland, 1650. pag. 35. We found our hearts extraordinarily stirred up by the Lord to assist the Parliament against the KING being abundantly satisfied in our Judgements and Consciences, that we were called forth by the Lord to be instrumentall, to bring about that which was our continuall prayer to God: viz the destruction of ANTICHRIST, and the deliverance of his CHURCH and people. And upon this simple account we ingaged, not knowing the deep Policies of worldly States-men, and have ever since hazarded our lives in the high places of the field against all the opposers of this worke of Iesus Christ. And having those things singly in oure eye, namely the DESTRUCTION of ANTICHRIST, and the advancement of the KINGDOME of JESVS CHRIST. So pag. 38: 39. A second warre more dangerous then the former was contrived against us by them that hated us of this Army of England under the name of SECTARIES, and a second testimony was given from Heaven to justify the Proceedings of his poor Servants, against the bloody Antichristian BROOD, though with the losse of many precious Saints; we were then powerfully convinced, that their purpose was to deal with the LATE KING as a man of blood, and being perswaded in our consciences that he and his MONARCHY was one of the TEN HORNS of the BEAST spoken of in Revel. 17. 12, 13, 14, 15. we being witnesses to so much innocent blood of the SAINTS that he had shed in supporting the BEAST, and considering the lowd cries of the SOULES of the SAINTS under the ALTAR, we were extraordinarily carried forth to desire JUSTICE upon the KING. But if there be any that have taken Councell against the Lord and his Anointed, whom the Lord hath decreed to set up in the holy Hill of Sion, we are perswaded the Lord has brought us as INSTRUMENTS, through which he will speak to them in his wrath, and vex them with his sore displeasure; we desire it may be known, we are not Souldiers of Fortune, & are not merely the SERVANTS of men, we have not only proclaimed JESVS CHRIST the King of Saints, to be our King by profession, but desire to submit to him upon his own termes, to admit him to the exercise of his ROYALL AVTHORITY, and with much more to that purpose: yea, to name but one more (the Declaration of Aprill 22. 1653. pag. 6. After much debate it was judged necessary and agreed upon, that the supreme Authority should

Against  
King,  
and a-  
gainst  
Anti-  
christ,  
and for  
the king-  
dome of  
Christ.

And for  
the Mo-  
narchy  
of King  
Jesus  
alone.



should be by Parliament devolved upon known persons, men fearing God, and of approved Integrity, and the Government committed to them for a time, as the most hopeful way to encourage, and countenance all Gods people, reforme the Law, and administer *justice* impartially, hoping thereby the people might forget *MONARCHY*, and understanding their true Interest in the Election of succesive *PARLIAMENTS*, may have the Government settled upon a true *Base*, without hazard to this Glorious *CAUSE*, or necessitating to keep up Arms for the defence of the same. Though much more of the same import out of sundry other Letters and *Declarations*: We might produce, yet for feare of being too tedious) our soules would rejoyce, and be abundantly satisfied to see an *Harmony* between these *Declarations*, and the present *Allions* of this present Government, seeing (as Solomon saith) *Ecclesiastes 4.5. When thou vowest (or art devoted or ingaged) to God deferre not to pay it: Better it is that thou shouldst not vow, then that thou shouldst vow and not pay, suffer not thy mouth to cause thy flesh to sinne, neither say thou before the Angell that it was an error, Wherefore should God be angry at thy voice, and destroy the worke of thine hands: Oh! my Lord! let the blood, lives, and tears, be thought upon that have sealed to these Declarations, and ingaged for Christ his cause: and the Liberties of the people by Parliaments, &c. O be not offended with us whose soules mourn for these sins and transgressions, and are weaned (as then you would have us) from *Monarchy*, or any such like *GOVERNMENT*! seeing in some of them (as in the *Declaration*, April. 2. 1653. and June 14. 1647. page ult.) you presse it upon us to stand for these things, and you say you expect it of us, and of all that are well affected to the *Publick*, but now we are declared offenders for so doing! Oh dear! honoured Sir, what shall we say but your owne words in page 52. of the *Remonstrance* of St. Albons. Your bare retracting or changing your cause (without better or any reasons giving) cannot put out the light which your former *Declarations* with reasons have let in, and which God hath so eminently owned and given his seals and increase unto. O my Lord! that these things might be cleared to the poor! unsatisfied people of God! whose hearts are bleeding under the sense of them day and night! *Zedekiahs* case and calamity for his breach of *Covenant*, and his imbondaging againe the people after *Liberty* proclaimed and declared, *Ier. 34. vers. 15. 16. And ye were now turned and had done right in my sight, in proclaiming Liberty every man to his Neighbour, and ye had made a Covenant before me in the House which is called by my name. But ye turned and polluted my name, and caused every man his servant, and every man his hand-maid, whom he had set at Liberty at their pleasure, to returne: and brought them into subjection, to be unto you for servants, and for hand-maids, being often in our remembrance.**

2 Be pleased (my Lord) a little to revise or reason, with the rise of this change upon the breaking up the late Parliament, taking its being there,

Against  
this Mo-  
narchy  
again,  
and for  
Parlia-  
ments.

(but for this end) to keep up the carnal interests the Parliament had voted down, viz. of *Clergy, carnal Church State, Tithes, Presentations &c.* which was according to the several *Declarations* of the *Army*, as in the *Case* of the *Army* stated *Octob. 9. 1647. page 2. 8. 10. and Declaration O' August 1. 1647. from Colebrook page 13.* the 5 Proposition is the present unequal, troublesome, and contentious way of Ministers maintenance by *Tithes*. be considered of, and remedy applied; so the 6th: is that the Rules and Course of Law, and the Officers of it be reduced and reformed, and concerning the *Clergy* with their carnal Church State the Remonstr. of *St. Alban: page 10th.* Declares it the *Parliaments* part to take away these corrupted forms of *superstition* and *Church government*, whether imposed without law, or rooted in the law in times of *Popish ignorance or idolatry.* or of the *Gospels* dimmed lights, by the means whereof snares and chains were laid upon conscientious and zealous last *Parl. men*, and the generality of the people held in darkness, superstition, and blind reverence of persons and outward things fit for *Popery* and *Slavery*; and also to take away and lessen that dependance of the *Clergy* and their *Ecclesiastical affairs* upon the *King*, or that interest of the *Clergy* in the civil laws and affairs which the craft of both in length of time had wrought for each other; and that it was the *Kings* part to uphold and maintain this dependance of the *CLERGY* their *MAINTENANCE* and *CHURCH MATTERS*; and were it not too tedious, I should name many more of your *Declarations*, against these very things: Now for the *Parliament* to do that which the *Army* and good people round the *Nation* have declared to be their duty, viz. to take off the civil dependance of the *national Clergy*, with their *national Church St.* and to vote a new model of the Law, viz. less intricate, uncertain, Tyrannical, and unjust, and more consonant with Gods word, Statutes, and judgements, and right reason; and more plain, and easie, and clear. And to take away corrupt and simonious presentations, whereby souls & people are bought, and sold to great mens lust, &c. For this (formerly judged, their duty to be dissolved and broken, yea at that time too (when this longed for mercy after many years was brought to the birth, by some faithful servants of the Lord (precious round the Nation) after many pangs, much opposition, yea and after the long sitting *Parliament*, was broken too for their neglect of these very things (with others;) seems

*Rev. 18.* strange to us, and the more dissatisfies us, for that we see this *Power* succeeding for the support and upholding of those things which that *Parliament* had voted down; and which the *Army* and good people had so often *decried* and *condemned* as props of *Antichrist*; this makes the *Rise* of it more grievous to the souls of some of the *Saints*, then in that the peoples choice was not in it, though former *Declarations* required that also, *6. Micah 16. The Statutes of Omri are kept, and all the works of the house of Ahab, and ye walk in their counsels, that I should make thee a desolation, and the inhabitants thereof as hissing: therefore ye shall bear the reproach of my people.*

O my Lord, that the opening and bleeding of our *Bowels* for these things might be a little regarded and pittied!

3. May you be ( most humbly as upon our bended knees ) intreated to take a little *account* of the already *fruits* and effect of this *alteration*, which (the Lord knows) we bitterly bewail before the *great God*, as more heavy to us, then the precedent *changes* in shutting up the *döres* of our *publick meeting place*, hindring us in *Gods worship*; imprisoning our dear *Brethren*, & friends, plundering reproaching & grieving them (and them onely) that have been, all these wars and yet are (and we hope ever will be) faithfull to the *Cause*, and *Kingdome* of *Christ*, threatening to take away their lives, and endeavouring to stone and stab them, aspersing them with most *palpable* loathsome, and notorious *faleships*, to possesse good people in the *Countries* with *prejudice* against them, as if they were against all *Magistracy*, *Ministry*, and *Property*. which with a wonderous and wicked *confidence* some write and spread about (the Lord lay it seriously to their hearts and humble them for it!) but we cannot be suffered to *Print* the *Truth*, or to answer their cruell and unjust *Calumnies* or *Accusations*, whilest we desire no other *weapons*, (the Lord knoweth) for our *warfare*, but the *Word of Truth*, (which shall be our defence!) yet we are not suffered to print, but plundered of our *notes* and writings, whiles all manner of *lies*, *flanders*, and *injurious reports*, are printed and divulged of us. This was counted Tyranny in the *Papists*, and after in the *Prelates*, and declared against page 10. of the Case of the Army dated *October 9th*, 1647. viz. [to lock up the *Printing Presses*, against whom they please was in the *Bishops* time complained of, as one of the great oppressions, &c.] and yet (to hinder *truth*) it is now made *Treason* to print or preach it; so that we are forced to *conceal* truth from the world, and the *witnesses* lie as it were dead in the *streets*, by such *Political combinations* (as these are) who do all they can to keep out the breaking forth of that light and truth, which suits not with their present *purpose*; wherefore our onely *remedy* left us is *faith* and *prayer*, and solemn *Appeals* to him that judgeth *righteously*: yet the Lord shew mercy to our *unkind brethren* in the day of his appearing! And in the meantime *declare* whether they do well or no to cry out (so cruelly and falsely against us in this our *new captivity*;) and to stir up the *people* against us (as *evil doers*;) by the advantage which they have in *sitting* what they will against us, whilest our hands are tied behind us, and *truth* is bound! Beside oh! oh! are not men of *corrupt principles* and carnal interest up again, with the highest confidence! *malignants* countenanced? and such encouraged as were (not long since) declaimed against? whilest onely the little remnant of the *Lords faithfull ones* are frowned upon! brow beaten! threatened! grieved! & wounded to the very souls of them for these things! But our great comfort and confidence is, that in this *Day* which will burn as an *Oven* (when all the *proud*, and all that do wickedly shall be as stubble) the *son of righteousness* shall arise with *healings* upon us.

3. The already effects & fruits of this change, most grievous to the faithfull & Godly

4 Lastly ( my Lord ) may you be pleased but to see a little in the midst of our *Agony and trouble*, how like this present *Government* looks to that which the Lord ( by the *faith and prayers* of his despised people 1. *Hab. 33.* ) hath so eminently engaged against, *laid in the dust*, and *stamped upon* with disdain ( fulfilling his word therein ) and whilst you were with the Lord ( therein ) he was with you but oh ! is there no danger to sit in the same *seats* ? be under the *Predicament* ? walk in the same *ways* ? keep up the same *interests* ? with them that were ( for example surely ) so visibly *destroyed and cut off*. The *former K.* ( cut off ) had his *Courts, Councils, State, Pride, Idleness* and vanity in persons about him, *rich beds, hangings, Coaches and Attendants*, evill Councillors, *Politicians*, and wise men putting him upon *imprisoning*, oppressing, and persecuting the *poor despised Saints*, under the name of *Deceivers, Hypocrites, and Fanatick spirits*, &c. that were not of the same *principles* with him, and his *Courts*, ruling for his *own interest*, more then for the *peoples Liberties, &c.* and ( O my Lord ) but a little consider, is it not so in all or most of the same *points*, pleaded against him so long together, by the sword, by the word and faith of Gods people, thousands of whom lost their *lives and dearest blood, and friends* to free us from all these things ; O my Lord, make us not your *enemies*, by telling you the *truth*, with *tears*, and bleeding Bowels ! ( the Lord knows ) for you and yours ; whom the Lord hath so highly owned and honoured in his design against this very kind of *G-----*, be pleased to use your own words, *page 12. 31: 38, 39.* of the *Declaration of the Army* going into *Scotland, 1650.* wherein you declare against any *government* by one man or *K.* unlesse it be *Christ Jesus*, and you tell the Brethren of *Scotland*, if they proceed in any such *design*, to bring in such a *Government* as *King* upon us, they will *blot out not onely their former merits but undo the noble achievements of the English Patriots and Parliaments in this & former Generations*: For we know ( say you ) *how easie a thing it is to raise a Monarchical spirit, but how hard it is to keep it within the circle*, we know the *common & old Plea is necessity*; which, with sound Christians, cannot now satisfy as a competent Apology; for that *Adachiwil* hath ever made that a Cloak for his exorbitant actions; yea the *Jews* to *crucifie Christ* pretended thus, *O  $\epsilon\kappa\alpha\upsilon\alpha\delta\epsilon\gamma\mu\epsilon\iota$*  but ( as one said ) there is no *NECESSITY* to sin, but against it, and the *Saints necessity* in a *civill reference* ( as well as spiritual ) is to exalt *Christ and his Kingdom*. But for this we onely flie to your own words again. [ *Remonst. St. Albans page 5th.* He that engageth ( upon pretences for publick ends ) and that upon publick necessity or extremity ( all which say you must concur to their full satisfaction therein ) he will first try all honest ways possible with due regard to, and concurrence with the preservation of the Magistracy, and Government under which God hath set him, before he will flie to any ways of extremity, neither will he ( when engaged therein ) proceed further or longer in that way against or without the Magistracy, then that first necessity, or some other ( emergent

How a-  
like this  
G. is to  
it which  
God hath  
thrown  
down be-  
fore our  
eyes.

Necessity  
no good  
Plea.

( upon



(upon the proceeding) does justly lead, not driving the pretence of Necessity, further to serve or advantage himself, or perpetuate those ways of extremity) but when the necessity or danger is over, wil return again to *Magistracy & Order* (i.e. now by *Parliam.* as before) we desire no more then your own words. But seeing some of your *Courts* do cast in *Reason of State* (as well as necessity) for this *Alteration*, we wish (in the travel of our souls for them) that their eyes were opened, to see that this hath been, & wil be the ruin of all *States & Governments* now in the world, viz. their *Reason of State*! carnall or worldly *Policy* and *Wisdom*, this brought the blood of *Iezreel* on the house of *Jeboi* (though he executed justice on the King and his house according to Gods command) yet he walked in the same wayes, gat up upon the same *Throne*, and into the same *Kingdome*, and kept up the same *Interests*! and Idoll worship his *Predecessors* (cut off by the hand of Justice) did, and did the worke but by halves; and all by reason of *State*. This *Reason* rejected *Saul*, and made him disobedient; this was that *Reason* that led *Pharash* and his Host into the bottome of the *Sea*, in his bitter heat against the worke of God in that day; and this was that principle that made *Sihon*, King of the *Amerites*, and *Og* King of *Bashan*, *Num.* 21. oppose *Israel*, and the *Works of God* in that *Generation* to their lamentable ruin. Yet this was the *Wisdom* principle and light that lead the *grave Council*, *John* 11. into that *curst Plot* of crucifying *Christ*! And is not this *Warning* enough for us? Then see in all *Ages* how the results of the purest reason of *State* have proved dangerous, yea destructive to *Governors* and *Governments*, ever oppugning the present *works* and *designe* of God in these *ages*. Therefore O my Lord, let not this principle deceive you, lest it destroy you! May I speak *Luthers* words to you (in *Epist. ad Melanct.*) *Sed scribis hoc frustra, si in secundum Philosophiam vestram, has res ratione regere, hoc est cum ratione insanire, perges & occides te ipsum, &c.* I write these things in vaine if you will resolve to Rule by carnall reason, and according to the corrupt *Distates* and the *Philosophy* of *Sophisters*, about you, which if you do will fall inevitably, sad to you one day, and too too probably, will prove, your Ruin, which we beseech our God in mercy and time forbid. *Ergo certe ut pro te & dolo te meas precor sic irritas facere.* Oh! make not our daily prayers for you of no effect to you; and because many Good men, as well as Great, were persw'd by the pernicious Counsels and Suggestions of some *Ambitionists* and selfish Teachers, and *Schollars* in *Luthers* days, he was wont to pray, [*a doctore glorioso & a pastore contentioso libera nos dominus*, the Lord deliver us from such glorious *Rabbies*, and selfe-seeking contentious Teachers? And must we not pray that you may be freed from such as have subtilly insnared you, and doe *Prelate-like* possesse Our you, and others against us? that we are *Fanatique*, mad men, *Fools* and *Weapons* heady enemies to *Magistracy*, *Ministry*, and all, &c. for which our hearts of warfar are pained wthin us, whiles we ponder these things, & our spirits greived, & our that men, of so much former *Merits* and *Eminency*, should so sinfully, and *adversanachristianlike* condemne and accuse us of things our hearts abhorre, and rise what loath wihin us: And call for *fraternity*, under the name of *Justice*, and they are

Reason of  
State  
dange-  
rons.



10  
Persecution against us in the matters of our Faith and Conscience, meely and alone for the exalting of Jesus Christ, in the things which they themselves have formerly preached and professed to others; yea, which the whole Army have frequently declared for many years together, till it came into Fashion to hold an Ephraim religion; a Court Religion, which will turne with the times! but the Lord humble and break us for it: But *Wisdoms* (saies Solomon) is better then Weapons of War, Ecclesiastes 9. and as we have so we desire no other weapons but Gods own word and spirit, having our Laines girt about with Truth, and having on (blessed be our God for it) the Breast plate of Righteousness in this busines, wherein our Brethren are against us.

But my Lord, may the pretended Truth (or poor crucified Jesus) beg this favour to give it as much liberty, as his adversaries have for their grovelies and falsities, in printing or otherwise; therefore will you be pleased, (though but for a little time, a moneth or two) to release those laws that hinder the liberty of publishing the Truth; Let our Brethren or any that will oppose us, convince, or conquer all they can with the good Word of God, &c we shall be satisfied to try it out with them so; but not with the weapons of the World, as they have them (now) all on their side, to imprison, persecute, or put to death, &c. for that is Antichrists (not Christs) way of warfare. In this sense (saies Luther in Epist. ad Erph.) consider with what sword I have conquered sin, and overcome errors, and subdued policy, I have never touched you with a finger, but with the spirit of Christs mouth, viz. the Word of his Gospel, so Zwinglius resp. ad Strasslin. tom. 2. fol. 301. declares the Word of God the onely instrument to overcome Wick, *unica a quo via sola est.* &c. The word is the onely way to subdue errors; therefore, saith he, we suffer all the writings of the Papists to be spread and read, for the sword of the spirit shall destroy them all; what cause then, saith he, is more suspicious then ours, who would have even the Adversaries Doctrines published, that we may overthrow them with the word? or yours, who reproach us as heretics all, and will not suffer ours to be published? this is our case now. Therefore as Luther wrote to the Dukes of Saxony, Epist. Tom. 7. fol. 109, so do we humbly to you my Lord, I would not, saith he, but all have free Liberty, yet if any transgresse Gospel bounds, and would raise up seditions or wars against you, then you may suppress them. So, my Lord, if we stir up people to rising, tumults, or carnal warfare, as men falsely charge us, then punish us as you please, for it is contrary to our principles so to do; but to the spiritual works and warfare, wherein we are now engaged, viz. faith and prayer. Furthermore O! that you would not beleave every report of the Rumors or Fire-blowers of these our new troubles, against us. For as it was once said, the way to get preferment and places is to write or rail against Luther, as Eccius Coccinus &c. found it, *Pauper Lutherus multos fecit divites*; so do many Many Merchants, and Mercenarij, see it at this day, the way to get preferment is to be forward against us and the poor despised Remnant. Now, my Lord, let not your ear be open to all their lies, and nor once open to the Testimony of Truth on our side; will you be pleased to peruse a little those writings taken out of my Study, and satisfy your self concerning the truth of them, *oculo irrefecto*, and not beleave those bias

and *parts*, which some *Sycophants*, probably, will acquaint you with, on purpose to irritate and incite you against the *truth*, and *Asserters* of it. Too too many such *Flatterers* are about you my Lord! which makes our hearts to bleed for you! that justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him, *Isayah 5th* But if we have no hopes left to prevail with you, yet our hearts are filled with hopes, and sure we are to prevail with God; our *Appeal* is in heaven, and the faith and prayer: which are up, (as high as ever since the world stood) either will bring forth your conversion; for *Luther* saith the Church converts, *secundum mundum sanguine* & orations, or your confusion. For the death and destruction of the *Persecutors*, was, as it was said of the death of *Arrius*, *pro cationis opus non morbi*. But if it be asked, what we would have you do, our present or *Answer* is; first advise with the Lord by faith and prayer, about your former *Declarations*, and the good peoples expectations in your *Closet* a little) for it is said of *Carolus Magnus* (oh that the like might be said of you!) *Plus cum Deo quam cum hominibus loquitur*, he loves more to be talking with God then with men, or any of his Court. 2. And then Proclaim a Fast or solemn day of humiliation for the *errors* and *sins* past; as 1 Kings 21. 27. 29. it came to passe when *Ahab* heard these words he rent his clothes and fasted, and lay in sackcloth, &c. and the Lord said, (erst thou how *Ahab* humbled himselfe, because he humbled himselfe before me I will not bring the evil in his dayes. And in 1 Sam. 12. 19. The people said, Samuel pray for thy servants unto the Lord thy God that we dye not, for we have added unto all our sins this evil, to aske a King, and why was this so great a sinne? see Sam 8. 5. they said make us a King, like as all the Nations about us have) And the Lord said, ver. 7. They have not rejected thee but they have rejected me, that I should not Reigne over them; this was their great sin, seeing the Lord himselfe would have ruled them, and redeemed the alone *Absolute Government* over them, upon which account *Gideon* (good man) refused it) Judges 8. 23. saying, I will not rule over you, but the Lord shall rule over you, 3. Furthermore, let a solemn day and duty be set apart to seek the Lord, for advice and Counsell what to doe; which good Princes and people alwayes did upon *straits* and *emergencies* of ol. as Judg. 7. 23. 27. Shall we goe forward or cease (say they) so 2 Chron. 20. 3. *Isaiah* feared, and set himselfe to seek the Lord, and proclaimed a Fast throughout *Judah*: so Ezra 8. 23. the want of this makes so much complaint by the Lord, as in *Amos* 6. 13. Tee rejoyce in a thing of nought saying, have we not taken to us horns by our own strength? And *Hosea* 8. 4. They have set up Kings but not by me, and Princes and I know it not, that is without so much as asking it at my hands, or consulting with my word, or my Seers (as they should doe) but of their owne heads they have done this. Therefore let the Lord be sought, to about these things, seeing other things were justly expelled from them that professed *Christ*; but the Summer is ended, yea the Harvest is past and we are not refreshed! O my Lord! trust mee to such *Flatterers* as alwayes speak smooth Things to you, and prophesie deceitfully; O hear a little the Lords own Seers! via. the *Ministers* of the *Kushan* from an High! And therefore let our

What to-  
be done  
in order  
to return

the Lords Prisoners (whom the Churches are robbed of) viz. Mr. Peak and Mr. Simpson & that they may open to you the present vision of God given them in these things! according to the dispensation of the spirit! O hear them! once (at last) preach to you in the power of Jesus; for whom (alone) they suffer, infirmities excepted, and by the word of the Lord try the spirit whether of God or no? for we are persuaded as long as they be in Prison you will be in blindness to the Truth, (*Tanquam ad doctrinam peregrinam*) Therefore let them have though but for a moneth or two, and though but half so much Liberty, to open the word of the Lord to you, as your Chaplain

Let out  
the Lords  
prisoners  
M. Peak  
M. Sim-  
son, Han-  
Trophat  
nom in  
Bride-  
wel for  
Christ.

have, if they preach not the very Truth, and prove it to be so before all men imprison them again, & us too with them in this cause; though hitherto we may say, as Luther said, *Fideliter predicare nihil aliud est quam furor em manu di in se derivare*, our Faithful preaching hath raised up fury against us. O my Lord! think of these things: these are the swords that pierce thorough our very souls, we sue not for our own lives, but for yours herein; did not Pharaoh send for Joseph out of prison, to interpret his dream? Gen. 41. and Belshazzar send for Danichap 5, to open his vision, yea and preferd him too, though Daniel declared his ruine, according to vision, Surely, surely, you will find it then, the wisdom of God is more excellent then the *arts & sciencie* of the wise men about you. But if you wil yet go on, *ad exitium potius quam ad exercitium*, after all our bleeding intreaties, and be hardened up by the dangerous counsel of your own Reason or them about you, then my Lord, our souls shal mourn in secret for you, as for one desperately lost indeed, and we shal proceed to bear our testimony against the sins of the times, for our appeals hangs in heaven, and we cannot recall it, yea as Luther once said, *Quo magis illi furunt eo amplius prece*, the more men rage, the more resolute we hope to be in our Appeals, faith & prayer to our JEHOVAH, continuing up the Altar ED for a witness, between us and our Adversaries; yea & come if need be as the Christians did by whole Troops to Arrins Antoninus proclaiming themselves Christians, and offering themselves up to the death for the Truth: Being assured in our very souls, though we now mourn, we shall rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory, *Luctum in laetitiam converteretur, lachryma in risum, sacculus cineris in corollas & iugitutum, jejunium in epulum, et manuum retortio in applausum*. In the meantime I beseech you my Lord pardon infirmities, for God hath pardon'd them, & own what God owns, that's truth: For *potius in ardentem rogam in flammam, quam nullum peccatum in deum commiseram*, as one said, I had rather, the Lord knows I think, leap into a bonfire, then wilfully commit wickedness or sin against God, yea *mallem obedire quam miracula facere*, as Luther said, I had rather be obedient to my God then work miracles, and surely my Lord, will you be a little serious, you will say that it is Conscience to our duty which doth altogether prompt us to this present cause, for the truth, Cause, and interest of our dear Lord Jesus the King of Salus, and Nations, wherein I am heartily desirous to be ready to live or die, which my Master, whom I serve will have me herein, without the least tittle or compound of Fraud, or Flattery. So far as I may,

Your True Sincere Servant,  
JOHN ROGERS.

Alimony Arraign'd, <sup>20.</sup>  
OR THE  
REMONSTRANCE  
AND HUMBLE  
APPEAL

OF

*THOMAS IVIÈ* Esq;

From the High Court of *CHANCERY*,

To His HIGHNESS the *LORD PROTECTOR*,  
of the Commonwealth of *England, Scotland,*  
and *Ireland, &c.*

WHEREIN

Are set forth the unheard-of Practices  
and Villanies of Lewd and Defamed Wo-  
men, in Order to separate Man and Wife.



*LONDON, June 27.*  
Printed in the Year 1654.



Alimony Arraigned  
OR THE  
REMONSTRANCE  
AND HUMBLE  
APPEAL

OF  
THOMAS WILKINSON  
From the High Court of CHANCERY  
To His Highness the LORD CHANCELLOR  
of the Commonwealth of England, Scotland,  
and Ireland, &c.

WHICH  
Are for the maintenance of Justice  
and Villains of Law and Deeds  
in Order to separate Man and Wife.



LOXDOON

Printed in the Year 1680



# The humble Appeal and Remonstrance of *Thomas Irie, Esq.*

To His Highness the *Lord Protector, &c.*



Ad it not pleased the Lord to bear up my fainting spirit, with more than an ordinary Confidence that the Deliverance of his People was nigh at hand, and that he would put a stop to the Violent Passions of Oppressing Men, I had undoubtedly snuck under those abominable Scandals and Aspersions, which have been cast, like dirt about the streets, upon me, by my Wife and her Abettors.

But certainly the Day of our Deliverance is already dawn'd; And we are in some measure assur'd, that *Justice* and *Righteousness* is already broke forth, and that the Abominations of the Wicked shall be no more clothed with *Authority*; but whatsoever is a Lie shall be made manifest, and confounded.

As our Eyes are therefore on the Lord, as the supreme Fountain of all Goodnets, so we trust that the Declaration of his Will shall be made out by Your Highnesse, being chosen by Himself in an extraordinary manner, and by a wonderfull series of Providences, to this very end, to execute Righteousness and Judgement for his People that are oppressed amongst us: and that your Highness will put on bowels of Compassion for the Afflictions of Men in Misery, who pour out their Complaints and Grievances before you.

With this Confidence I appeal from the Chancery unto your Highnesse ( being unable to endure any longer, either the Expences or Delays of that Court; or indeed the Justice, which is there distributed ) For besides the hazarding of that which is better than a precious Ointment, much of my Estate hath been consumed, and great Debts contracted, by reason of my attendance upon these unnatural Differences, (which have been fomented between my self and my seduced Wife ) much of it torn away by Violence under a Pretence of *Alimony* for

her, to whom I never denyed or refused any thing whatsoever.

And that which remaineth is daily so molested with Creditors, that I now may most truly take upon me the Expression of *Job*, *I once had Riches, but now have none*: And unless it will please your Highness to afford a speedy Redress, I shall hardly enjoy long my Liberty also.

I will not say any thing of those sad and dismall Thoughts which have been continually in my Mind, those hideous Temptations, which have been hourly grating and gnawing my very soul.

During this sad Condition, tis the Voice of the Lord only can speak Peace unto my Spirit, ( whose Name be blessed for those sweet and refreshing Experiences, with which he hath supported me in this fiery tryal ) but I shall open unto your Highness, as unto a good *Samaritan*, the wounds of my Body and *Fortune*; ( & briefly present a *Narrative* of the whole Matter concerning my self, and wife, and how it hath been transacted in the Chancery ) That so I may with the more confidence expect a Cure proportionable to my Disease; and that your Highness Judgement may be as well grounded upon Knowledge, as my Suffering upon Experience.

Having faithfully discharged the Trust that was reposed in me by the honourable *East-India Company* ( as their chief Agent at *Madraffopotan*, where I had not only the Command of the persons of Thousands of People, but also the Fort of *St. George*, and Town of *Madraffopotan*;) And having made a thorough Reformation of the grand Abuses which had crept into those parts, to the great Injury of the Trade; and erected them a Town by my own pains and Industry, even out of the Sea it self, for the better advantage and security of it; I resolved with my self, ( though I was often perswaded by the said Company to continue longer my Charge ) to return into my Country, where I had left the near relation of a Wife behind me: And by how much the more that Reciprocal happiness ( which we enjoyed together ) did revive, the more enflam'd were my Desires for a Return.

But I had no sooner arrived in *England*, but the first News almost that was brought me, was the Death of my Wife, in her very Journey to meet me.

This was the first Tryal which the Lord laid upon me: But as he corrected, so he gave me Patience and Submission to his Will in it; neither were friends wanting to endeavour a Belief in me, that as the Lord had taken one Wife from my Bosom, so he could bestow another.

After many several Dayes and Months thus spent in Melancholy,  
and

and willing to inure my self to the Condition I enjoyed when I left England, I was perswaded to address my self to one Mrs. Garret, a Widdow and Daughter of Mr. *Stepkins*, who was represented unto me to be as beautifull in mind as in person; And though her Husband had left her nothing, yet was I not deterr'd by this to forbear my fate, supposing what was wanting in *Fortune*, would be made up in *Affection* and *Sweetness* towards me.

Hereupon, in short, about *October*. 1649. a Marriage was had and concluded between us; and, that I might give the best demonstration what a high value I put upon her, I settled for her Joynture 1000 l. *per ann.* and Covenanted with her Trustees to leave her at the time of my Death 1000 l. also in ready money.

Her Father (now taking notice of this cordial and affectionate dealing of mine with his Daughter) made in short this Proposition unto me, That if I would give him the said *Stepkins* 1000 l. more, and deliver forthwith unto his said Daughter, as many Jewels as might be worth at least 1200 l. that then he would settle his Estate at *Wapping* (being 240 l. *per Ann.*) upon me for my life, and after my decease to my Wife; And in case we had Issue, then to them; and in case we had no issue, then to the Heirs general of the said *Stepkins*, or such as he the said *Stepkins* should limit and appoint.

To which I returned as short an answer, and told him, I would immediately perform his demand. Whereupon I did dispoſite 1000 l. in mōny, and 1200 l. in Jewels, and all the aforesaid agreements and Settlements were Indented in Parchment, and legally executed accordingly (as may appear from the Deeds themselves, proved by two Testimonies in Chancery, to which I refer my self.)

I make no mention what Presents, nor of what value they were, (though considerable) I sent her before Marriage, (because they were purely Gifts) but the other upon the most real and highest consideration of Marriage.

I suppose its already evident, that had I now found the affection which I promised my self, it might be very well said to be rather purchased than gained; for although there was 240 l. *per ann.* settled upon the Considerations aforesaid, yet was it a dear bargain unto me, only for my Life, to lay down for it 2200 l. Neither was I to enjoy this untill the said *Stepkins* should decease; which (if the contingencie of his Death, and the Interest of the Money had been considered) was more than ten years purchase, for one life.

Nevertheless, had there been a Return but of common Gratitude,

(much less of a conjugal Affection) I should scarcely have entertained a Thought of Penitency for so large a Joynter, which I had scolded.

But certainly the Anger of the Lord began now to be kindled against us; and whether 'twas for her sins as well as mine own, and particularly for being instrumental to the Disheirring of the eldest Son and Heir of the said *Stepkins* ( who never had demerited it in the least measure from the Father ) I know not, the Lord discover it unto us both in his due time : But certain it is, that she could not long continue herself from discovering, that 'twas rather my *Fortune* than my *Person*, which she had wedded; rather embracing Advantages of expressing Kindness to others, than her Husband.

Notwithstanding many of these inconveniences did I pass over ( though 'twas very grievous to be thus used so soon after our Marriage; within less than six months, and still persevere ( if with Prudence I may speak it ) with more than usual fondness ) she could no sooner propote any thing, which my Purse or Industry could procure, but 'twas immediately provided; nothing which might be either for Necessity or Ornament ( though never so costly ) but she had it, though I borrowed money to provide it.

I could here tell your Highness in what Plenty I maintained her, with what sums of Money in her Purse, with her Coach and Horses, Saddle-Horses, and rich Furniture, rich Cloathes, Beds, Linnen, &c. but that I should discover too much of my Folly in it, as well as her Unworthiness.

But I am confident, (and tis proved by sufficient Witnessees in Chancery) that in eighteen months after our Marriage, she had spent for her Accommodations above 3000 l. whereof 600 l. was in Apparel only, 500 l. in ready money.

But all this could not prevail, the Multiplicity of Curtesies and Endearments towards her on my part, was but the encreasing of her frowns and slightrings towards me; and being unsatisfied with what I voluntarily bestowed upon her, she took all opportunity ( in my absence from home ) to imbezele what goods soever she could come at; and at one time ( when I was at the Court of Aldermen ) she took from my House 300 pounds at least of rich *East India* Stuffs, and Plate.

The Company she resorted unto ( were no less offensive unto me than her actions ) being either Persons of very low Condition, or Desperate Fortune; whose Necessities and Debaucheries still prompted her to further Inconveniences.



It being now evident unto me, and all our Acquaintance beside, That a sudden Ruine could not but be near to our Estates, and unprincipals to our Persons, I entered upon a serious Resolution to withdraw for a while to my Country house at *Malmshurby* in *Wiltshire*, and perswaded my Wife to a compliance herein; This I did, that I might pay those Debts, which I had contracted by her means, and take her from the Occasions and the Persons which had enticed her to such pernicious courses.

But they ( finding if their *Diana* should leave *London*, the silver shrine would be also removed ) were too too prevalent with her to retard her Journey; Nay in conclusion she absolutely refused to goe with me.

Notwithstanding I did not forbear all the Arguments, which either Prudence or Necessity could dictate: And that I might not neglect any Motive, which I thought might conduce to this end, I gave 100 l. to two of her Familiar acquaintance ( whom I thought most prevalent with her ) to perswade her to accompany me into the Country.

But no Charms of Perswasions had any Influence, nor Reason ( though very urgent and manifest ) but was slighted.

Nevertheless before I went out of Town, I writ this Paper, and left it with her.

Sweet-heart,

**T**He Reasons wherefore I am at present forced to leave *London*, is in regard of the following particulars.

1. Because my House, Family, Goods and Estate in the Country goeth much to Ruine, for want of my Presence.

2. Because my Engagements in *London* are great, viz. 1146 l.

3. Because of those great Engagements, my Credit, which hath been of value, ( but now through some Disparagements and evil practices, ) is lost in *London*, that I cannot borrow any more money to supply yours and my present wants: And now, when I thought all things had been forgotten, I heard abroad by my Friends, that by certain warrants issued out by the States for your self, and others to appear before them, that I am asswaged to walk *London* streets; and I much fear, that if I continue in *London*, you will in short time be ruined your self and me.

4. You are so transported by the Perswasions, and practices of your Aunt and Others, that I, nor no Friend of yours, can intreat you to leave their Company and evil counsel, which daily breeds Debates and Strifes between us, Notwithstanding, they have hereby their ill Counsel and evil Alliances, the chief Occasion of all, which hath brought us to this sad Condition and Shame that we are now in.



So that I may now say with Job, I had once Riches, but they are now wasted, and once I had a Wife, but now she will be no longer mine.

5. I have no employment nor Calling in London; which disgracefull and unquiet life, is hatefull unto me, and most disadvantageous; for I find not this Town good for my health, (by reason of my continual trouble) my expences are insupportable: And I protest before the great God of Heaven, my only Joy and Comfort should have been, and shall be (if I can any way find your Affections reciprocal, and your Compliance equal) to support your Honour and Fortune beyond my Own: But if we continue in London, I find all will be quickly confounded and destroyed.

Therefore, Dear Heart, take the premisses into good, religious, and serious consideration, and go with me unto our habitation in the Countrey, by which means, all things that are past, will be forgotten, whereby we shall be both happy; for my intents are onely and really to make you a happy Woman: For I protest before God, when you come into the Countrey, I shall render my self and Estate to your Disposure, to come and go when and where you please, which shall be faithfully and lovingly performed by me, but if not, be pleased to take this as a sad Farewel, from thy

London 17 March

Most affectioned Husband,

1650. Thomas Ivie.

And immediately after my Arrival at Malmsbury, as soon as I had accommodated my house; I sent her this Letter.

Most dear Heart,

**Y**ou cannot but be sensible of my sad condition and necessity at London, by reason of my Discontents and great summes of money which I doe owe; and have not wherewithall to satisfie my Creditors, for had I stayed longer, I must of necessity have been carryed to Prison, or at least to my Grave; For I was so much troubled and grieved in mind at your unkindness, and want of money, that I thought my heart would have broken, which so transported me, that I knew not what I did, when I left you: Yet notwithstanding your unkindness to me (if you can borrow 30 l. of any Friend of ours to supply your present occasions) I will see it satisfied; if not, I shall willingly consent, that you pawn some of your Jewels for so much money; and when the India ships come home (God willing) I shall redeem them for you again; and when I have paid my Debts, you shall command me and my Estate, which shall be at your disposure. I should rejoyce to see you and my Father Stepkins here; Therefore, Dear Heart, when you have a mind to come unto me, advise me, and I shall wait upon you, to bring you down; And when you are weary of my Company and Entertainment in the Coun-

Country, ( where my self, and all that I have, shall be at your Disposure ) I shall ( when you please ) return again with you to London, and ever remain

Malmsbury 24 March,

1650.

Your most affectioned Husband,

Thomas Ivie.

Instead of a Complying answer, which I expected ( for We cannot easily despair of Things We passionately desire ) I received this Summons from the Lords Commissioners of the Great Seal, to appear before them.

**W**Hereas Theodosia your wife hath on this present day prefer'd her humble Petition unto the Lords Commissioners of the Great Seal of England, Thereby praying Allowance of Alimony, as by her said Petition remaining with us doth appear, We do at her instance give you Notice thereof, Requiring you hereby to make your personal appearance before Us, on the thirtieth day of this Instant, to speak with Us about the same.

Middle Temple the 11 day  
of April, 1651.

Richard Keeble,  
John Lisle.

Immediately, (laying aside all my Business) as fast as Passions and Spurs could quicken, I repaired to the Chancery, where I found ( to my great astonishment ) this false and scandalous Libel, under the Title of a Petition for *Alimony* prefer'd against me.

The humble Petition of *Theodosia Ivie*, Plaintiff, Wife of  
*Thomas Ivie*, Defendant.

**T**hat She being the Daughter of John Stepkins Esq; and married to the Defendant, who hath ( without any cause given him ) not only deserted her Company, but left her destitute of all manner of Means for her Livelihood and Subsistence; And that during the time she cohabited with him, she hath not only been in great Danger of her Life, by his Cruel Usages, and unjust contrivances; but by some means occasioned by the Defendant, she hath been very weak and Infirmary; And hath received from him such Infirmities, ( not becoming a Husband to conferr on his Wife; ) And that by reason of his said cruelties, and the peril of receiving from him Diseases of Dangerous consequence, she could not cohabit with him as his wife, without eminent peril of her Life; And the Defendant was not only departed from her, but utterly denied to allow her any conve-

nient Support; And that for meer necessity she had contracted some small debts; And therefore she prayed the speedy Aid of the Court; And that They would summon the Defendant before Them, that upon hearing her just complaints, she might be relieved, and have such fitting Allowance by way of Alimony gramed to her, as to the Court should seem meet; And that for the present, she may have some convenient Allowance for Expences in this Sute, she being otherwise unable to proceed therein.

To which (having sought Patience from above) I returned this answer.

That 'tis true, he Married the Plaintiff, and hath ever since used her with the Respects of an affectionate Husband to a loving Wife, and neither hath, nor did intend to desert her Company, but much desires it, if he may find respectfull carriage from her; and is so far from leaving her destitute of all means, that since his Marriage, which was not then above eighteen Moneths, he had furnished her with Jewels and Pearl, to the value of 1200 l. besides Apparel, which cost him above 200 l. All which Pearl and Jewels she had in her Possession in March then last past, when the Defendant went to his dwelling-house in *Wiltshire*, at which time, he not only solicited her to go and dwell with him, but promised her (upon the Enjoyment of her in the Country) to resign both himself and his Estate to her Commands and Disposal.

That he hath likewise paid her Father 1000 l. for which he should have setled upon the Defendant some Estate of Inheritance for her Portion, which is all the Fortune he ever expected with her, whereof he hath not received the value of one penny.

That he allowed her for Clothes money, and otherwise for her use, above 800 l. And during the time he hath lived with her, he hath spent in Household stuff, House-rent, and House-keeping, 2870 l. so that in eighteen Months, he hath spent with her 6000 l. And this he mentions not, as if he repented of his Kindness to her, but to evidence to their Lordships that there is no just cause of Complaint against him, for not allowing her Maintenance.

That he never acted any thing of Danger or Cruelty, or that might occasion any infirmity to her; nor was there ever any Disagreement, or any Cause why she should separate from him; But her desire was to live in *London*, a place neither agreeable to the Defendants health, or Estate; He having already (by reason thereof) contracted many Debts: And confesseth, that having (by consent of her Father and her self)

self.) bought an Estate in *Wiltshire*, situate in a healthfull air, and a place of much conveniency, delight and profit. He hath many times by Letters, in Person, and by Friends, earnestly desired her to live with him at his said house in the Country, where she shall want for nothing in his power, for her use and conveniency, and care shall be taken for her accommodation for her Journey, wherein he hopes yet to prevail, that they may mutually enjoy the Comfort of each other, which he much thirsteth after; and is not a little grieved there should be any Question of it.

That he took such Order ( presently after his going into the Country ) whereby the Plaintiff was supplied with monies for her present occasions, and presumes the foul scandals suggested in the Petition, are well known to the Plaintiff to have so little colour of Truth in them, as he hopes the same were put into the Petition, as words of Course, rather than by her Direction: And he utterly denies the same; and therefore he hopes, he shall not be ordered to make Allowance to the Petitioner, (as in the Petition) she demands.

Could ever any Man suspect to be thus dealt withall by a Woman, that had plighted her faith in Marriage to one, who had settled so great a Joynture, given her so many Gifts, so much Money, Jewels, and all other accommodations whatsoever in the greatest Plenty, for the Consideration of Nothing? Certainly amongst the *Indians* themselves have I not seen so great perfidioufness.

Now had I just Reason to suspect, 'twas not only the malicious Counsels of her wicked Abettors, was the cause of her inhumanity towards me; but that she had in her own Brest a Principle of Enmity and dissatisfaction, even to the Relation of being my Wife.

Nay seeing the *Scene* appears, tis too easie to understand what Plot is laid and concluded; If she can survive me ( which she thinks very probable ) and hath no issue of our two bodies ( which she is resolved never to have ) by keeping herself from me, Then will she be a *Fortune* indeed, and her Widdowhood be worth its weight in Gold. And if in the mean time (during my life) she can have from the Lords Commissioners ( by way of *Alimony* ) 300. *per annum*; she will think her self in a better condition, than her father, who had but 240 l. *per annum*, both for himself and his whole Family: And to prosecute the Sute, she hath 1200 l. worth of Jewels already, and 500 l. in ready Cash advanced, and her Husband much in debt, so that peradventure she may outpend him also even at Law.

But to obtain this glorious design, many difficulties are to be pass'd



through ; And though she herself hath resolved to caluminate vehemently ( presuming that somewhat will gain a Belief amongst many ) yet will not this be enough ; and therefore, *witnesses* must be prepared of as large *Consciences as Foreheads* : And for their better encouragement , They shall participate in the Gain and Advantage : Welcome Expressions and Opportunities to such Persons , whose defamed Lives , and necessitous Fortunes , rendred them , neither in a Capacity to live , or converse with People of any Honesty or Reputation.

As for her part, her suggestions and insinuations were high indeed ; much fear she pretended ( for had it been more than a Pretence , all had been accomplished , and my life lost ) lest she should participate of the Sins and Punishments of *Sodom and Gomorrah* : And as for her body she durst not trust that with me lest ( at any time being Morose and Cholerick ) I should injure her by Blows ; or if kind , I should infect her with unclean diseases.

To enforce these Motives upon the Minds of all People , who now took notice of these distractions , Never was there a more exquisite Vizard of Modesty put on by a Woman ; Never were Expressions of Religion more distorted to an ill end ; no Projects and Practices of Obscenity and Murder it self , were wanting to colour these malicious devices against me ; Nay , so grossely infatuated was she in her scandall , that she represented my person to be more like to a *Monsters* than a *Mans*.

Her Abettors are not wanting in acting their parts also ; What she insinuated they converted into clamours ; neither stuck to depose any thing , what possibly could be believ'd to be sworn by them , without any apparent contradiction.

Having thus prepossessed the Ears of as many Persons of Quality as she could , and framed a Harmony of Testimonies ( as well as of Witnesses ) with as much Art and Cunning , as her own Wit , or her Abettors , ( or the matter it self could supply ) she took out with much eagernesse a Commission out of the Court , to make what proof she could of her Petition.

Notwithstanding this further provocation also , my Lips were lock'd up with silence , as well as my Heart with sorrow , not retaliating Evil for Evil in the least measure ; or so much as intimating unto her , of her first Follies ( which if they were published by me ) might have raised a great Cloud upon her Reputation : Neither was I content to be totally Passive of what injuries had passed , but was resolved not to leave any means unattempted to reclaim her from these extravagancies.



And thereupon went unto her in Person, with Mr. *Esco*, Serjeant *Middleton*, and Mr. *Booth*, at Mr. *Zancher's* house (he himself being present) and with as much Rhetorick as my real affection to her could dictate did passionately move her to a Reconciliation: shewing what Scandal and dishonour would follow such differences, and promising withal, a perfect Oblivion of whatsoever had been acted against me; And to fortifie my arguments the better, I desired all those Gentlemen there present, to do the office of Christian Moderators, and to endeavour to stop the Breaches between us, which were too wide already.

Nevertheless, by how much the more weight she perceived in our Reasons, the more obstinacy she discovered in her returns, utterly rejecting any agreement, upon what terms soever.

Hereupon suspecting in her the apparent Symptoms of a fear'd Conscience; and how that by my silence, the World began to infer a main Guilt of those Aspersions which had been divulged against me, Upon the serious advice of my Counsel (though I cannot but acknowledge a very great Reluctancy thereunto) I was perswaded to examine Witnesses also, both to vindicate my own integrity, and to discover unto the world the Grand Cheat that was contrived to gain my Estate (which could no otherwise be accomplished) without defaming my Person (and if it were possible) to take away my life also: which shall evidently appear anon.

But before I shall give an Account of the proofs which were made on my behalf, I shall according to her own forwardness and Method give your Highness a short view, what was attested for her.

One swore, That he saw me squeeze her (at eleven a clock) one night, as She was going down stairs.

Another that she heard my Wife complain of ill usage (but though she lived in house with us) never heard me give an ill word to her.

Another heard her cry out, Help, Help, Murder, Murder; and saw me take her by the Throat: Though I refer my self to my *Affidavit* on Oath, yet when I shall manifest it, (That this Woman who swore this, was brought in that very night, and next morning conveyed away) I suppose 'twill be no difficult thing to perswade any one to believe, that this Creature was brought in on purpose to be a Witness against me.

The Woman that swore this was brought in that very night, on purpose to be a Witness, and the next morning went away again.

One *Measter* (a pretended French Physician) swore that she was ill, and that there was a suspicion of Poyson: but this was five moneths

after she left me; and was commonly reported to have the Pox, (which being a Venemous Discale) the *Frenchman* might safely swear (with a mental Reservation, the frequent Practice of his Countrymen) there was a suspicion of Poyson.

This is the substance of what was sworn against Me, (and should I name the Persons of the Witnesses) they were more mean than their Testimonies; The Chief of them was her Aunt Mistress *Williamson*; of whom I shall say no other, but that her *Way* and *Living* is after the rate of 300, or 400l. *per annum*, though it be well known, That neither her Husband, nor her self, have any *Profession* to live by, or any visible Estate, nor worth a Penny; but are so nearly poor, That he or she dares not appear in publique, lest they be carried away by *Bailiffs* for the Multitude of Debts he owes.

This is that ungodly Wretch, who too visibly hath been the Ruine, both of my self and Wife, as will appear from the Depositions themselves.

One Person there was produced on her behalf (whose Name hath a Reputation in the World, viz. Sir *John Brampton*;) yet all that he can depose for Her, is nothing which is material, but that he never knew her defam'd, but in this Busines, and that she was bred up amongst his Children; and that he often endeavour'd a Reconciliation between us: Whether he did it, or no, I cannot affirm, but when I was told by him lately, and never heretofore, That he had a *Pre-Mortgage* of the Estate of 240 l. *per annum* (made unto him by *Stepkins*) which was settled on Me for the Consideration aforesaid, I hope, that I shall not be condemn'd, as too jealous without a Ground, That he is fishing for his own Interest in our troubled waters.

Were there ought else considerable deposed against me, I should deal so ingenuously as to relate it, being very confident, that at the hearing of my Cause before any in Authority, there will not be wanting *Agents* enough for her, to lay open the worst against me.

One thing therefore more (and that which they think most considerable against me, not in order to justify her Complaint, but to take off a Belief, from what she knew I could prove against her and her said Aunt *Williamson*;) was briefly this, That I endeavour'd to suborn one *Holdsworth* (a poor fellow about the Town) to swear point blank, That my Wife was a Whore, and her Aunt *Williamson* a Bawd.

That I may be impartial in this Narration, I shall cite the very words themselves of this Deposition, which are these.

That in *April* and *May* was twelve month, He (viz. this Deponent)

came to the Defendant, (*viz.* to my self) for Money for one *Nicholas*; and the Defendant said, He could prove Mistress *Williamson* a Bawd, and would have had him sworn it; and offered the Deponent money to swear the Plaintiff (meaning Mrs. *Jwie*) was a Whore.

That he had made the Commissioners for him; and said, That *Stephens* and all his Family were Base People, and often offered him money to swear; and said, he had two Witnesses more, if he would make up the third.

How much Indiscretion, as well as Falshood, was in this Deponent, and both in them, who employed this inferiour Person, and who too probably practiz'd that infamous *Art* of Creating Knights of the Post (which seems to appear, even from the Oath it self) For certainly, had I been provided with two Witnesses (as he said I told him) which Number the Law admits even in the highest Cases) it had not only been an impertinent losing of my Money, but my Honesty also, to no purpose: Besides there are scarce any so ignorant, but understand how difficult a thing it is to prove even a Whore, a Whore.

'Twas against the Advice of my Counsel, and my own Inclination also, to examine any Witnesses of so mean a Quality in such Differences, (as these are between my self and my Wife) lest the contemptibleness of the Evidence, might derogate from the Truth of the thing: Most of those (whom I produced to give Testimony on my behalf) were persons of fair Estates, many hundreds *per annum*, and such, who for many years past, have been Justices of the Peace in their Country, &c. But more (of this Nature) I omit: For (without Doubt) Poverty & Honesty are not inconsistent: The most precious Saints of God, are more frequently found cloath'd with Raggs, than in a Kings house: *Job* himself was more acceptable to the Lord on the Dunghill, than in his costly Palaces: But withall there must be a Poverty in Spirit, as well as in Estate; otherwise, they will forfeit both their Religion to God, & their Credit amongst Men: For certainly a poor Man (being notoriously vicious and scandalous) is to be reputed rather a Vermin in Nature, than a Member of Christian Society, whose Testimonies stink in their own Nostrils, and their Memory shall perish with them.

That your Highness may the more knowingly judge and determine, both of this and other Proofs against me, I humbly begg leave to lay before your Highness the Manifestation of my Answer which I returned to my Wifes Petition, and what Evidences I produced to the clearing of it.

1. To the first Charge in the Petition; That I left her destitute of all manner of Livelihood and Subsistence.

'Twas.

*'Twas Deposed,* (Besides her having of 1200l. worth of Jewels in her Custody) That I maintained her with meat, drink, and cloaths, and all Conveniences in a very plentiful high way, *l. A. fol. 19. f. 40, 47. l. 3. f. 3, 4, 49.*

That she had the Disposall of all things in his house, *f. 7.*

That he spent Twenty shillings a day in meat, besides Spice, Sugar, Wine, Beer, &c. *fol. 8. f. 55, 56, 57.*

That he importun'd her to go live with him into *wiltshire*, *l. A. f. 4. l. 13. f. 9, 10, 11.*

That she was richly cloathed, *fol. 60.* Had a Coach and Horse for her use. *f. 67.* Besides a Coach, he provided for her Journey a single horse, worth 45 l. *f. 68.* and a Riding Suit worth 40 l. and horse furniture, worth 40 l. more. *l. B. f. 68.*

That she absolutely refused to keep me Company into the Country, but would rather stay with her Aunt *Williamson*, *l. C. fol. 13.*

That I gave 100 l. to Serjeant *Middleton*, the Serjeant to the Lords Commissioners, and Mr. *Pauncefoot*, a Clerk to several Committees, to perswade her to go with me, *l. A. f. 8.*

That she refused notwithstanding, *l. A. f. C.*

And for her Reception, I immediately declared in my answer, my Willingness to receive her, and cohabite with her, and provide her all necessaries, and conveniences whatsoever.

To the Objection which follows in the Petition, That my Usage was Cruel.

*'Twas deposed,*

That I ever expressed much Love towards her, and was an Indulgent Husband, *l. A. f. 18. 39. fol. 2. l. B. f. 3. f. 48. l. C. f. 10, 11, 19.*

That I ever shewed a Willingness to pleasure her in any thing, *l. B. f. 63.*

That the squeezing her by the arms, was but the holding of her, when she attempted to run from me, intreating her with all fair words to stay, *l. B. f. 82.*

To the third Charge, That I had given her foul Diseases, (meaning the *Pox*) 'twas not only Deposed, that I was then free, but upon the Search of my Body, (which I voluntarily did desire might be done by able and honest Physicians) but there was not the least Sign or Symptome, that I ever had that fowl Disease. *l. B. f. 35, 36. l. C. f. 4.* And at that time that this was reported, she her self was free from it, *l. B. f. 37.*

And for my further Vindication herein, I beseech your Highness to read



read, but these two Certificates under Oath of three eminent Doctors, and one Chirurgeon; the President of the College of London, Dr. Pruican, Dr. Wedderburn, Dr. Nurse, and Mr. Boon.

**W**E whose names are hereunto subscribed, do certifie, That Thomas Ivie Esquire (upon a scandalous Petition exhibited against him by Theodosia his wife) that he had infected her with that foul Disease of the Pox (as the said Mr. Ivie informed Vs) did desire Vs, and voluntarily offer himself to be searched by Vs concerning the same. Whereupon, upon search, and view, had o' his naked body; we find, That Mr. Ivie is not only free from the said disease, but so free from it, that we cannot perceive, that he was ever tainted therewith: Witnesse our hands.

Francis Pruican President of the  
Coll. of Physicians in London.

London 30 May,

Thomas Nurse M. D.

1651.

Hen. Boon Chirurgeon.

**W**E whose names are hereunto subscribed, do certifie, That about the moneth of June last 1650. Upon the scandalous report published of Thomas Ivie Esq; who lately before had married Theodosia, Daughter of Iohn Stepkins Esq; that he had the foul Disease of the Pox, and had given it unto his wife, That at the request of the said Mr. Ivie, by Examinations and Answers given by him, and others having interest, we did find that the said Mr. Ivie was clear of the same Disease, and had no Symptom or Token thereof: Also we (upon examination of the said Mr. Ivie) did find him to be clear of the said Disease at that time, Witnesse our hands.

London 30 May,

Thomas Nurse M. D.

1651.

Jo. Wedderburne M. D.

Hen. Boon Chirurgeon.

Besides all this (that there might be nothing wanting to make out the Integrity of my Soul, and the Cleer nesse of my Conscience, before all the World) I did voluntarily (for the Court compels none in these Cases to return an answer upon Oath) make this Affidavit before a master in Chancery, and at the next opportunity of participating of the Sacrament, immediately before I touch'd those sacred Elements, did declare and avouch the Oath, which I had taken, to be unfeignedly true, without any Equivocation, or mental Reservation whatsoever; and did thereupon print and publish it to the World, as followeth.



Thomas Ivie of Malmsbury in the County of Wilts, Esquire, and Husband to Theodosia Ivie, late widow of George Garret deceased, and Daughter of John Stepkins Esq; deceased, maketh Oath, &c.

**H**AVING often with grief and anguish of mind considered those many scandals and aspersions which have been laid upon me by my own wife, from whom my Soul once expected as much happinesse, as could be hoped for in a Conjugal Estate; and finding how easie the minds of many Persons, and those of quality too, have been, not only to give an Ear, but a Faith also, to those abominable Reports, which She and her Abettors have rais'd and fomented, utterly to abolish ( if in their power ) my Reputarion, either as a Gentlemen, or a Christian; both which, ( I trust ) have been honourably preserved with much Constancy and Fidelity amongst thousands of Persons in those places where I have had long abode; lest I might be adjudged guilty in those things, which are only private to our selves, and which cannot admit of any proof or witnesse on either side, her personal and single Affirmation, being the only argument to induce the world to the belief of so vile, and inhumane actions; I have thought it most necessary, besides these Prooves which are taken in Chancery, to vindicate my innocency, not only with a bare negation, but with such a one as is ratified with the solemnity of an Oath: This I do the rather, because in these unhappy Cases between the Husband and the Wife, the Answers which are returned to the Petition, are not deposed to, as in other Proceedings in *Chancery*, neither can I content my self to stop here, but am willing to give the highest satisfaction that a Christian can expect on Earth, and shall therefore chose such a time as the receiving of the most precious Body and Blood of my Saviour, Jesus Christ ( of which with all humility this day, having strictly examined my own heart, I intend to participate ) as to declare my innocency thereupon to those principal points which are objected unto me by my Wife: were there any other waters of Tryal under the Gospel, as there was under the Law, I could most safely adventure the drinking of them to clear my self before the World: But this, I hope will give a plenary satisfaction to all Godly and Consciencious Persons, who ( if ever ) will give Credit to the words of an afflicted Spirit, will now doe it, after such a solemn sort.

And I do first upon my Oath say and affirm, that I have been so far from Acting and Committing that foul Sin of Sodomy upon her Body, that I never had within my brest the least inclination or desire to so vile

vile & abominable a thing; neither did I ever attempt to perswade her by fair Words and Intricements, or to move her by threats, or ever used the least force or struggling with her to compass any such Base or Heathenish Designe, as she most falsely and opprobriously charged me with.

And moreover, whereas on a certain night she was necessitated, in preservation of her life, as she had suggested to the Lords Commissioners, and several others, to leap out of the Bed from me, to cry out, *Murder, Murder*; alleging, that I offer'd violence unto her by pinching, beating, and striking: Now I do protest and depose before Almighty God, that this was done without any such provocation, even in the least measure; Nay at the same time, while she was attempting to leave my house, and running to her Fathers, I us'd all the friendly and kind Perswasions which I could expresse to detain her, and onely holding her by the arm, without the least hurt as I believe, I often repeated my hearty Sollicitations unto her to remain with me: But I do really beleeve, upon the consideration of several Circumstances and Passages since that time, that both her Out-cry, and her Subsequent Behaviour was design'd before that night. If any thing at that time might be look'd on as a shadow to justifie her proceedings, it was this, That a little before she leap'd out of the Bed ( amongst other Discourses ) I intimated a Dislike of her Carriage, which was observed by others, towards one who pretended to be her Physician; This, and this only, was all the Cause and Occasion ( if this be any ) of her forsaking me at that time. And for all other times whatsoever, I do affirm upon Oath, that I never gave her the least stroak in my life, or ever did so much as pinch her in Jest, to the best of my Remembrance, or did ever directly or indirectly, let fall from my mouth any kinds of Threats whatsoever.

And I do further swear, That untill such time as she exhibited that foul and scandalous Petition to the Lords Commissioners, that I lov'd her unfeignedly, respected and esteemed her above all Creatures in the World; and as I layd down my *Fortune* at her feet when I first married her, so would I have layd down my *Life* too, for her good and preservation. Nay, I do allege further upon my Oath, that notwithstanding that scandalous and false Petition exhibited against me in pursuance of her malicious designs, she had examined Witnesses to the same me; yet out of Christian and tender Consideration of the Relation wherein I stood towards her, as a Husband, I was willing from my heart, and did endeavour ( by the severall means of Persons of

Quality, allyed both to my Self and Her ) to compose all differences, that We might for the future Cohabit together in Peace and Content, and not to regard any Aspersions which she and all her Witnesses, being there examined, had cast upon me, nor to retaliate in the least measure, still deferring the Examination of my Witnesses against her, and attending whether it would please the Lord to give her a sight of the Error of her way, and to return her home to her Husband, who was most willing to receive her.

As to that Aspersions cast upon me, That I committed folly with her Servant *Jane Gilber*, though I need not say much to it, the Maid her self, and other credible Witnesses having clear'd me in that point, both in Court, and on her Death-bed; and convinced the World of the horrid and unheard-of Practices of her and her Abettors, in abusing and exposing the body of the said *Jane* to the View and Search of severall men, and suborning her to give in Testimony against me; yet that the World may know the Integrity of my Soul in this also, I do further swear, That I never entertain'd within me the least thought of corrupting her Chastity, or did ever commit any unlawfull or dishonest action with her, from the time I knew her to this day.

And lastly, whereas I am charged by my Wife to have suborn'd severall Witnesses against her, and particularly one *Holdsworth*; I call the Lord to bear me Record in this also, and do upon my Oath affirm, That I did never directly or indirectly procure any Witnesses against her to testifie farther than the truth of the thing, what he or she would knowingly and safely, without breach of Faith or good Conscience, Depose.

True it is, that *Holdsworth* being employed as a Bayliff to arrest me at the Sute of my Wifes Taylor, for a considerable sum of money, which she her self was indebted for, and behaving himself civilly towards me, I gave him five shillings, and for no other end or purpose; And upon my Oath, I protest, that I never had any such Communication or Discourse with the said *Holdsworth*, to any such intent or purpose, as he hath most maliciously deposed against me.

*Thomas Ivie.*

Sworn August the 4th 1652.

*Thomas Benet.*

**W**E whose Names are hereunto subscribed, do Certifie that this is a true Copy of the Oath, which *Mr. Thomas Ivie* did take before *Doctor Benet*, a Master in Chancery, which also he avouched to be true before and after his receiving of the Sacrament, which he received since his

last dangerous sickness: As witnesse our hands the 6th. of August, 1652.

Nic. Bernard Doctor of Divinity.

John Baber, Doctor of Physick.

Thus much, (and I think more cannot be expected or done by a man) was offered for my personal Vindication; and that it may be visible unto your Highnesse, with what Persons I have dealt withall: I shall summarily recite the heads of those Proofs, which were made concerning this Wife who begg'd *Alimony*; and shew your Highness the blazing Star, which enlightn'd her in these destructive ways to both our ruins (I mean her Aunt *Williamson*) concerning whom, 'twas sworn,

That Mrs. *Williamson* did ever abuse Mr. *Ivie*, and was an Incendiary between him and his Wife, and the chief Caufer and Promoter of the Differences and Breaches between them, *l. A. f. C. l. f. 79. l. C. f. 18. f. 19. 27, 38.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* perswaded Mrs. *Ivie* not to go into the Country with her Husband, *l. A. f. 60.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* severall times spoke scandalous, opprobrious, and disdainfull speeches (against Mr. *Ivie*) to his Wife, *l. A. f. 51. l. B. f. 12.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* said Mr. *Ivie* had the Pox, and had given his Wife the Pox, *l. A. f. 52. l. 3. f. 13, 14.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* reported that Mr. *Ivie* had bugger'd his Wife, *l. A. f. 52.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* reported, that he had got *Jane Gilbert* (his Wifes Servant) with Child, *ib.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* told Mr. *Ivie* (who by reason of her ill name had forbid his Wife to keep her company) that she would keep his Wife company in spite of his Teeth, *l. A. f. 60 59.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* told Mrs. *Ivie*, that if she would separate from her Husband, she would enforce *Alimony* from her Husband for her, *l. A. f. 61.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* told Mrs. *Ivie*, that when she was separated from her Husband, they would live together, *l. A. f. 62.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* brought to Mrs. *Ivie*, a lock of *Snellings* hair, *l. B. fol. 27* of which she made a Bracelet, set it with Ribbons, and wore it on her wrist, *l. C. f. 29.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* bid her wear it next her heart, *l. B. f. 30.*

That Mrs. *Williamson* encouraged Mrs. *Ivie* to give her Husband base



language, *l. c. f. 31.* and told her, she did well therein, *l. c. f. 32.*

That Mrs. *Ivie* relating, how She had given her Husband ill words, Mrs. *williamson* runn unto her, and told her 'twas well done, *l. c. f. 33.*

That Mrs. *williamson* received the Goods, which were embezzelled from Mr. *Ivie* by his Wife, *l. B. f. 40.*

That Mrs. *williamson* sollicitd Mrs. *Ivie*, to let *Snelling* lie down with her on a bed; ( and when she had effected it ) went out of the Chamber; and left M. *wheatly* to keep the door, *l. c. f. 43, 44, 45.*

That Mrs. *williamson* encouraged Mrs. *Ivie*, not to give any Accounts of moneys which She had received from her Husband; Telling her, what was her Husbands, was her own, and why should she account for her own, *l. c. f. 58. l. A. f. 61.*

That Mrs. *williamson* lived in a house of ill fame in a little blind Alley, *l. c. f. 72.*

That Mrs. *williamson* seldom lives with her own Husband, *l. c. f. 79.*

That Mrs. *williamson* made *Snelling* a Favorite of Mrs. *Ivies*; and that she not only perswaded Mrs. *Ivie*, but cry'd out unto her to lie down on bed with the said *Snelling*, *l. c. f. 80.*

That Mrs. *williamson* called Mr. *Ivie* Clown, and Fool; and advised Mrs. *Ivie* not to go with him into the Country, *l. c. f. 13.* And that he was an ugly fellow, *l. c. f. 20.*

That Mrs. *williamson* carried Letters for Mrs. *Ivie* to her Gallants, *l. c. f. 16.*

That Mrs. *williamson* said, She hated Mr. *Ivies* child, because 'twas his, *l. c. f. 21.*

That Mrs. *williamson* brought Mr. *Snelling* to Mr. *Ivies* house, after he had forbid him, *l. c. f. 21.*

That Mrs. *williamson* ( the very next day after Mr. *Ivie* married his said Wife ) made horns and mouths at him behind his back, *l. c. f. 21.*

That Mrs. *williamson* reported that Mr. *Ivie* had a Whore, and it being replyed, that 'twas hard to prove any such thing; she answered, that she would hire a Whore to lie with him, and take him in the fact, and so obtain Alimony for Mrs. *Ivie*, *l. c. f. 26, 38.*

That when Mrs. *Ivie* said, she should love her Husband very well; Mrs. *williamson* replyed, that if she should love her Husband so well, they should be all undone, *l. c. f. 26.*

That a Fortune-woman looking in Mrs. *Ivies* hand, and telling her, that she and her Husband should live long together, immediately thereupon Mrs. *williamson* with'd her hang'd for her news, *l. c. f. 25.*

That Mrs. *Ivie* telling Mrs. *williamson*, that her Husband gave her so good



good words, that she knew not what to do, ( meaning, whether she should proceed in the plot against him ) at which Mrs. *Williamson* answered, *Hang him Rogue, Damn him Rogue, l. A. f. 32.*

How horrid the actions of this Person have been, in some measure is laid open ; But how contagious the conversation ( of this monstrous and unchristian wretch ) is, will be too sadly and experimentally demonstrated by these following Depositions concerning my Wife and herself ; about whom 'twas sworn,

That notwithstanding the great Estate I had settled upon her, and the vast summs of money I had expended for her use and ornaments, which any one would think, ( had been enough to have purchased a common Gratitude and Civility to a Husband ) she immediately after our marriage slighted me to my face, never returned, in the least measure, any reciprocal affection, *l. A. f. 39.*

1. That immediately after our marriage, she held correspondence with Sir *William Killigrews* Son, under the name of *Ornaldo*, called herself *Callis*, *l. C. f. 15.*

2. That the said *Killigrew* confessed upon his own Oath four Letters that he had sent her, and alwayes writ himself *Ornaldo*, and her *Callis*, *Kill: own Deposit.*

3. That she admitted both Sir *William Killigrew* and his Sonne her Corrivals ; and that young *Killigrew* threatened to kill his Father, and her Husband also, *l. C. f. 15.*

4. That Sir *William Killigrew* chid Mrs. *Williamson* for suffering his Son to be so familiar with Mrs. *Ivie*, *l. C. f. 15.*

5. That Mrs. *Ivie* ( under the name of *Callis* ) promised to *Ornaldo* a Courtesie, *l. C. f. 15.*

6. That Mrs. *Williamson* was used to carry Letters between them, *l. C. f. 16.*

7. That if Mr. *Ivie* did carry her into the Country without her consent, *Ornaldo* would pistol him, *l. C. f. 16.*

8. That she received Letters, and held Correspondency with one Mr. *Snelling*, whom Mr. *Ivie* had forbid his Wifes Company and house, and forbad her likewise to receive him, *l. C. f. 15.*

9. That Mrs. *Williamson* brought in Mr. *Snelling* to Mr. *Ivies* house, after that he had forbad them both) and Mrs. *Ivie* received them, *l. C. f. 21. f. 18. l. B. 79.*

10. That Mrs. *Ivie* went abroad after her Husband was in bed, to meet with *Snelling* at Mrs. *Williamsons* house ; and both Mr. *Snelling*, and Mrs. *Williamson* brought her home to her Husbands door, which was about 12 a clock at night, *l. C. f. 27.*

11. That

11. That Mrs. *Ivie* going out of her Bed-chamber after Mr. *Ivie* was in bed, and being asked by him, whither she was going, replied, that she was retiring to her devotion, but went to Mrs. *Williamson*, l. C. f. 25.

12. That she was with Mrs. *Williamson* and *Snelling*, (who lay there by the name of *Clerck*) a whole day, at the Sugar-Loaf in *Long-Acre*, (a suspected house,) l. C. f. 11. l. C. f. 25.

13. That she was frequently conversant with *Snelling*, l. C. f. 74. f. 23.

14. That Mrs. *Ivie* met with *Snelling* at a Cooks house of ill Report in a blind Alley in *St. Martins Lane*, l. C. f. 76.

15. That Mrs. *Ivie* lodged and abode there, out of her Husbands house, many days and nights together, l. C. f. 72.

16. That she refused to return to her Husband, when he sent for her, l. C. f. 73.

17. That she being asked by her Husband at any time (when she returned home) where she had been, refused to answer, l. C. f. 77.

18. That *Snelling* had spent a 1000 l. on Mrs. *Ivie*, and Mrs. *Williamson*, B. f. 26.

19. That *Snelling* came up into Mr. *Ivies* Bed-Chamber with a Pistol in his Pocket, and questioned him (before his Wife) for forbidding him his House, l. C. f. 23.

That *Snelling* would defend her with Pen and Sword, l. C. f. 23.

20. That *Snelling* came often to Mrs. *Ivie*, when her Husband was out of Town, l. C. f. 22.

21. That *Snelling* was frequently private with her in her Bed-Chamber, l. C. f. 23.

22. That she lay out of her House, when her Husband was out of Town, l. A. f. 40.

23. That when her Husband was out of Town, she made a great Feast for Mr. *Snelling*, Mrs. *Williamson*, Mrs. *Wheatly*, Mrs. *Nowell*; All three notoriously known to be — l. A. f. 42. At this time the Plot for *Alimony*, and the practices upon *Jane Gilbert* (which cost her, her life) were in probability contrived.

24. That Mrs. *Ivie* sent to *Lilly*, who (amongst other things) returned this Caution to beware of two Women, describing Mrs. *Williamson*, and her Companion Mrs. *Wheatly*, l. A. f. 57.

25. That she often sent to *Fortune-Tellers*, and particularly to one Mrs. *Nowell* aforesaid (lately Cook maid to my Lady *Cunny*) l. A. f. 58. l. C. f. 33. 34. 35.

All that she enquired of these Wizards, was to know how long I should live.

26. That

26. That when Mrs. *Jvie* was separated from her Husband, then she and Mrs. *Williamson* would live together, *l. A. f. 62.*

27. That Mrs. *Jvie* her self laid Copper's in the Window, and gave out in speeches that her Husband had laid Poyson there, *l. A. f. 53.*

28. That her Chirurgion, ( being asked how she did, after he had visited her ) said that her hair came off, and shook his head; And that he had made her an Issue, *l. A. f. 62. 63.*

This was above six moneths after she had left me.

29. That she immodestly said before two, *viz. Snelling* and *Killigrew*, that her first Husband had done the part of a man, twelve times the marriage night, But that this Husband had done but eight.

30. That she was too famillier with her own Father, his hands were seen under her Coats, *l. C. f. 18.*

31. That Mrs. *Jvies* Father was often in bed with her, *l. C. f. 20.*

32. That she gave 100 l. to her Brother, and promised to keep his Wife, in case he would murder her Husband; and procured from the *Council of State* a Passie to carry him beyond Seas, after the murder was executed.

This was proved in the upper Bench the Term, before my Lord Chief Justice *Roles*; and she was bound over to the good Behaviour: The Passie was there produced, and is now in my Custody.

Besides these short intimations, many foul and horrid stories ( could I have produced ) of Designs for my Destruction: but because I was not able to make out clear and evident proofs of them, I was unwilling either to trouble the Court, or disturb my own Thoughts, with any thing lesse than Realities and Demonstrations.

*One History.* or rather a Dismal Tragedy, acted by my Wife; Mrs. *Williamson*, and their conspiracy, was with all its Circumstances, so clearly delineated in the Depositions, that I should wrong my Cause, should I not relate this also: and perhaps few *Romance's* or *Gusman* himself can parallel it.

It being resolved at the Feast, ( which was held at my house, when I was in the Country ) by my Wife, Mrs. *Williamson*, Mrs. *Whealy*, and Mrs. *Nowells* ( being the Persons ) for whom that Treatment was provided; That though the Scandals of *Sodome* were sufficiently high, which had been divulged against me; and would render me odious to the World: Yet seeing 'twas but a matter of *Fact* between us two in private, which could not be proved more, than by her single affirmation; and that her own Midwife ( having search'd her for that very

purpose ) had, so streight a Conscience, that she would not swear, that my Wife had been injured in those parts; Did therupon conclude, that some other way must be found out, which might admit of *Testimonies*; otherwise, they suspected, my Wife could hardly obtain *Alimony*, or procure a *separation* from me.

Hereupon it seems, This Plot was afterwards put in execution upon *Jane Gilbert*: Its proved, *L.C.f. 115.*

This Wench they picht upon to be the Instrument of their Design, because she being actually a Servant in my House, it might be thought very easie for me to find an opportunity to lie with her; and being also of a sickly disposition, it would be no difficult thing to raise a suspicion, that she might possibly be with Child, especially, being not well recovered of the Dreggs of the Small Pox, which she had had a little before.

Hereupon Mrs. *Williamson* (that she might the better colour her Intention privately) carried this Maids water unto one, whom they call *Trigg*, a Shoo-maker (as I have heard) by Trade, and enquired of him, whether the Party that made this water, were not with Child?

*Trigg* (having good Instructions, and doubtless a large Fee) Ordered Mrs. *Williamson* to bring the said *Jane Gilbert* unto him, and he would search her.

At her return home to my Wife, there was a new consult, how they might carry the Maid to *Trigg*, and make her willing to be search'd? leave that to me, (said my Wife) and immediately went unto *Jane Gilbert*, and said, *Jenny*, my Father hath sent for my Aunt *Williamson* and me to Breakfast to morrow morning, and hath commanded me to bring thee with us, because he hath provided a Dish of *Milk and Eggs*, that which he knowes thou doest dearly love: The Maid (little suspecting any mischief, couch'd under this pretended Kindness) thank'd her Mistress; but by reason of the many cloaths she had to steel and starch against the morrow, (being *Sabbath-day*) was willing to be excused: Nay *Jenny*, replied my Wife, you must and shall go; for I know my Father will be angry, if we bring you not.

So a Coach being call'd, my Wife, Mrs. *Williamson*, and the Maid went to Mr. *Stepkins* house, but neither found him, nor the *Milk and Eggs*: Ah, quoth Mrs. *Williamson*, are we serv'd to? wee'l make a mornings work of it, now we are out; me-thinks I have a rumbling in my Guts, pray let's go to Doctor *Trigg*: Agreed, said my Wife; And as they were passing from Mr. *Stepkins* to *Triggs* house, my Wife and Mrs. *Williamson* (being very frolick) began to jest with the said *Jane Gil-*



*Gilbert*, and perswaded her to make *Trigg* believe, she was a new married Woman, and so that would put a Trick upon the Doctor his skill.

After they were all arrived in the Doctors presence, Mrs. *Williamson* made a private address unto him, and pretended to have acquainted him with the pain in her Guts. But having ended her Tale in privat, What think you, said she, of yonder new married Wife? *Trigg* (having felt her pulse, and bid her spit once or twice) told her, she was *Splenetick*; Like enough that, quoth Mrs. *Williamson*; But is she not breeding Doctor? Yes, I warrant you, said he; so the wench turning about, and smiling, was bid go out by Mrs. *Williamson*, (that she and her Mistress might have some private Discourse with *Trigg*, about the Drink which they had given her) which she did accordingly, whilst her Mistress, Mrs. *Williamson* and *Trigg* held a long Conference together; when this Scene was over, All returned home.

About three or four dayes after the said *Jane Gilbert*, having been promised leave by my Wife to go visit her friends in the Country, for the Recovery of her health, my Wife took her into a Chamber, and said, Ah *Jenny*, But I have somewhat more to tell you, (and thereupon shut the Chamber door, none being present but them two, and Mrs. *Williamson*,) 'Tis commonly reported, *Jenny*, quoth my Wife, that you are with child, and 'tis my desire to have it cleer'd: Tush, said Mrs. *Williamson*, if it be so, I warrant you 'tis by the Best in the house; (meaning my self) Let us know it, for we can, and will conceal it, and so dispose things, that it shall never be a discredit, or disgrace unto her; Nay, if she will confess that she was with Child, they would provide for her; But, said they, if you will refuse to let us know it, and go into the Country, we will Report, that you are gone to take some Physick to destroy the Child.

The Maid now considering what snare they had brought her into, by going to *Trigg*, (as aforesaid) being perswaded to act the part of a new married woman, was astonished at this Surprizal, and cryed out, The Lord protest me, for I am very innocent from any such thing; and withall my heart, said she, will I do any thing, that may give you satisfaction, or clear my self from this Scandal.

Look here, said my Wife to her, my Father hath sent me a Letter, where he says, That Doctor *Trigg* sayes that you are certainly with Child; and if you will not confesse, you must be whipped, in *Bridewell*.

As they were thus Discoursing, (often intimating that 'twas their



Designe to make this Maid confess her self with Child by me) in came Mrs. *Sessions*, my Wifes Midwife, whom she perswaded to search *Jane Gilbert*, which she willingly submitted unto; and the midwife (in their presence) acquitted her from being with Child.

Hereupon, my Wife commanding some tears from her Eyes, wept passionately (as she seemed) and breaking into great Passion, said, Ah *Jenny*, have I loved and entertained thee thus long, been as kind to thee, and as tender of thy good, as if thou wert my own Child, and canst thou conceal any thing from me? Doubtless thou art with Child: and therefore come, put on your mask, for you shall once more to Doctor *Trigg*, who understands these things better than any midwife; and he will prove you to be with Child: And that you may not think I have any Plot upon you, (that Objection was very strong within her) put on your mask, (that the Doctor may not know your face again) and fetch your Water; and Mrs. *Sessions* shall go with you.

The Maid being perplexed in mind, and far from any of her Friends, knew not what to do in this condition: But being urged by her Mistressse went again with the Midwife.

After the Midwife had given *Trigg* her Water, and discoursed with him privately; He called to *Jane Gilbert*, and bid her go up stairs with him: But the poor Wench (not knowing which to prefer, her Modesty or Innocency) refused to go with him; until at length (being clamour'd at, and absolutely forced up to his Chamber) she was necessitated to follow him: Where *Trigg* began to acquaint her, that her mistressse Mrs. *Tie*, had told him, that she had been too familiar with her Master, and therefore he must search her: And did thereupon (in a most rude and violent manner) force his hands under her Coats, to her naked Body; and did use her in a most abominable way, &c.

And when he had effected his businessse, he told the Midwife that she was with Child; though the Maid absolutely and earnestly denyed the same.

Hereupon they left *Trigg*, and returned to my Wife, who having heard the Relation from Mrs. *Sessions*, what had been done (being totally unsatisfied) caused her to be carried to another Physician, Dr. *Hinchley*, and shewed him the Water; and desired him also to search her in like manner: But his Verdict was unlike that of the (*Mountebanck*) *Trigg*; for he peremptorily avouch'd she was not with Child.

Notwithstanding all this could not satisfie the aim of my Wife, and

and Mrs. *Williamson*: But once more she must expose her nakedness to a search of another Doctor, a Man-midwife, Dr. *Hinton*, who in like manner, as Dr. *Hinchley* ( notwithstanding Mrs. *Williamson* and my Wife did earnestly sollicite him to attest that she was with Child ) acquitted her from being with Child ; and would justify her to be a Virgin.

These two *Testimonies* did no way forward their Design, for by this means, all the pains in Threatnings and Perswasions, ( to acknowledge her self with Child by me ) began to be undervalued, by how much the more the said *Jane Gilbert* had been acquitted by the two Doctors and Midwife, and accused only by that *Ignorant Quack Trigg*.

And therefore seeing the Wench was so obstinate that she would not comply with them, ( and least at my return she might discover this unto me ) a new Project was set on foot, so to terrifie the Wench, that she might leave *London* immediatly.

And thereupon they came unto her, and told her, that Mr. *Stepkins*, my Wifes Father, would doe her a notorious *Mischief* if she would not acknowledge her self with Child: Mrs. *Williamson* advis'd the Maid to goe for a while into the Country, until Mr. *Stepkins* his Anger was over.

Upon this account she was sent away to her Fathers house in *Hertfordshire*, where immediately after her arrival, she received a Letter from my Wife; that her Father *Stepkins* was so incensed against her, that he would not suffer her any longer to live with my Wife.

Notwithstanding the great love she bore, she would not leave her destitute of a service, but would provide a convenient Place for her,

Scarce eight days had passed, but down comes Mrs. *Williamson* to her ( pretending she had been at *Cambridge* ) and came out of her way on purpose to see her; Though 'twas evident she came directly from *London* to the said *Jane Gilbert*.

Insomuch that the Maid suspected some farther ill towards her; ( having been formerly so abused ) But parling together, about former Passages, The Maid asked Mrs. *Williamson*; what Ill she had deserved from her Mistresse, that she should be so disgraced, as she had been; and though she found her guiltlesse, she should now be put away? Well, quoth the Maid, by Gods help, I will be to morrow in *London*, and will endeavour to right my self from these Aspersions.

Whereupon she found the end of Mrs. *Williamsons* Journey ( was to hinder the Maid from comming to *London* ) ( because I was the day before

before arriv'd out of the Countrey ) lest she should see me, and discover what had been done unto her; in order to make her confesse that I lay with her, and that she was with Child by me.

Mrs. *Williamson* now perceiving, that the said *Jane Gilbert* was resolv'd to make a stir in this foul businesse, returned with all speed to my Wife; and wish'd her to think of a way, how to hinder her from speaking with me.

The next Day, as soon as the said *Jane Gilbert* came to my house, my Wife met her at the Door, and giving her many good words, perswaded her to take a Lodging near that place, (and change her name) and that she would pay for it.

The Maid (very much troubled at this usage) was very pressing to know what offence she had ever given her; Truly, quoth my Wife, Sweet *Jenny*, I love thee most dearly; But the Truth of all is, my Husband and his friends give out, that 'tis unfit for me to keep a Gentlewoman to wait upon me, besides common Servants; and that 'twas their envy towards her, and therefore she must be gone; but withall assur'd her, that she would provide a convenient place for her.

My Wife now thought, that she had (by this Trick) made the Maid believe me to be the sole cause of her turning away, and sufficiently exasperated her against me; yet did not despair of a compli-  
 ciance from her, and therefore said, For my part, I am content you stay this night, (that she might farther try her) and to morrow thou shalt have another Lodging look'd out for thee.

But my Wife understanding the next morning, that I began to par-  
 le with the Maid about the passages aforesaid, (which indeed were communicated to me in the Country) knockt very furiously for her to come up into her Chamber; and commanded her immediately to leave the house, and would not suffer her to speak any more to me.

Whereupon she went to one Mr. *Priest* house, a Brother of one of her fellow servants, and lay there privately, (as she thought) but 'twas made known to my Wife; who immediatly sent a Maid to sound of what temper she was, and how she stood affected towards her: and it being return'd, that she was full of Disdain and Passion, by reason of the aforesaid practices against her; and that she would forthwith send for her Trunks, they were immediatly seized upon by my Wife, and locked up in her Closet.

Notwithstanding, upon this Report, the maid did not send, but came her self to demand her Trunks; and I seeing of her in the house, began

began to ask again, why she went away, and upon what occasion that Searching of her (by men, and women) were? But her Mistress calling her Queane for acquainting me with it, and threatening to strike her for it, denyed her the Trunks, and caused her forthwith to be sent away: And the very next Day Mrs. *Williamson* and my Wife gave out in Speeches, (amongst my Family, and Neighbours) that they had broke open the Trunks, and had found that she had been a Baggage, and a notorious Thief, and stollen her Goods.

And thereupon (the better to secure the Wench, either for complaining of these Abuses, or telling me the Truth of her Usage) they procured a Warrant from my Lord Chief Justice *Roles* to apprehend the Maid for her Life, (having charged her with Felony.) But finding that the Maid kept in, and that by vertue of the said Warrant, they could not enter any house to take her forth, they entered into a new Project, how the Wench might be secured (both Tongue and Person) and also, that they might seize on her, wheresoever she was.

To this end, Mr. *Pouncefoot* was look'd on as a fit Instrument (having Relation to the Lord President *Bradshaw*) and was desired to procure them a Warrant from the Council of State, upon Pretence, that this poor VVench held Correspondency (with the Enemies of the Commonwealth) beyond Seas, and so apprehend her: By vertue of which VVarrant she was seized on accordingly; and kept Close Prisoner 18 days together with great hardships.

During this Imprisonment, a Gentleman came to this VVench from my Wife, advising her to humble her self to her Mistress, and to confess her self Guilty, and much to that purpose, but she (being innocent) utterly refused any such Acknowledgement.

During this Imprisonment, many Petitions (for to be heard at the Council) did she attempt to present, but were still kept off by the means of the said *Pouncefoot*, neither could she ever be heard.

At length my Wife and Mrs. *Williamson* finding nothing could prevail (after sorrow and grief (in this lamentable condition) had almost killed her, they had contrived a meeting for the Wench (by the permission of her Keeper) in *Moor-fields*; where, as soon as my Wife saw her, she fell into a deep fit of weeping to the Wench, and told her how dearly she loved her, and that she was in perfect friendship with her, and earnestly desired that all things (which had passed) might be forgotten; promising withall, (that in a very short time) she would abundantly expresse, how sensible she had been of her late Sufferings.

Here.



Hereupon my Wife, without ever acquainting or procuring their Order for her freedom, ( only giving the Messenger of the Council of State 20 l.) caused the Maid by her own Power ( by which it seems she stood committed ) to be set at liberty.

But very suddenly after enlargement ( her body being quite spent, and her mind almost distracted with grief and melancholy ) She died; and in her Death bed professed solemnly (that by reason of those Cruelties, which had been practised upon her, by Mrs. *Williamson*, and Mrs. *Itie*; and especially by the operation of a Potion given her by them, ( which upon the words of a dying woman ) she believed to be poyson ) That they had been the cause of her death; and that she doubted not but that the Almighty God would require her Blood at their hands.

After these things were laid open to the Lords Commissioners for the great Seal; I little expected that Vices should be received for Reasons; that such abominations should have been thought worthy the protection, not to say the encouragement of such eminent Judges; but with grief of heart, and empty Purse, may I say, that I found experimentally there Chancery rather a Court of oppression, than good Conscience; nay, I have this peculiar in my Case ( that after all VVitnesses on both sides were examined ) they never afforded me that favour (which they omitted to none) as to command me and my VVife in Person to attend them, and to endeavour a Reconciliation between us.

This I thought hard measure, because I was informed all others had participated of that Civility from them; and the more hard, in regard my VVife had frequent and private addresses unto them, and I was never admitted any.

The consideration of this, not only astonished me, but gave me a strong Alarm also to be very Circumspect, lest I might have as little Justice in their Sentence, as I had favour in their proceedings.

And that on the other side, when I remembred, they openly declared before my Council, that nothing should be concluded without sending for both parties, and also their parties; and also their Order of the 27 of *October* 1651. that they had denied her any expences of the Sute, in regard the merits of the Cause should be speedily heard; I could not conclude within my self, but that I should be dealt withal according to their own Rules, and practice of all the *of England*; and that a Summons ( upon a day of hearing should be first sent )



ere any Sentence pronounced, or Decree made in the Cause.

But what I often suspected, and was intimated unto me by others, I had now too much reason to believe.

For after eight moneths ( having all that while never received any command to wait upon their Lordships ) when all my Counsel was out of Town, *July 24. 1652*: ( Her Counsel Mr. *Vincent*, and Lieut. Col. *Zanche*, her Solicitor, with a Sword by his side ) presented unto the Lords Commissioners, a final Decree ready drawn; ( it not being first perused by Counsel of my side, as by the Rules of the Court it ought to have been ) for no leis than 300*l. per annum*, ( a fair sum, and enough to tempt a good Woman to be bad : ) The Draught of the Order is thus.

*Lords Commissioners. Saturday 24 of July 1652. Between Theodora Ivie Plaintiff, and Thomas Ivie her Husband, Defendant.*

**W**HEREAS the Plaintiff having exhibited her Petition ( against the Defendant her Husband ) to be relieved for Alimony, unto which the Defendant having put in his Answer, divers Witnesses were examined by Commission, and others were ( by their Lordships directions ) also examined by the Register, in the presence of Counsel on both sides; And for the better clearing of the Matters, and Satisfaction of their Lordships therein, their Lordships were also pleased themselves to examine several Witnesses, viva voce; And the Cause having taken up many dayes in hearing, ( after much Debate and Pains spent herein; And upon full and deliberate hearing of what could be offered on both sides: And upon reading of the said Depositions, and of the Indenture made upon the Marriage; whereby the Estate of the Plaintiffs Father, is seiled upon Sir John Brampton, Knight, and William Booth, Esquire, to the uses in the said Indenture declared: ) Their Lordships were fully satisfied, that there is good cause to give allowance for Alimony to the Plaintiff; And do Order, and Decree, that the Plaintiff have paid unto her, the summe of 300 *l.* by the year, which their Lordships intend to be had and raised, out of the Plaintiffs Fathers Estate, so settled in the said Trustees, as aforesaid, until farther order: And do therefore Order, that the said Defendant, and the said Trustees, shall authorize, or permit and suffer the Plaintiff, or whom she shall nominate and appoint, from time to time, quietly, and without interruption, to receive the Rents and Profits of the said Lands: And the several Tenants of the premisses are hereby ordered to pay the same accordingly, from our Lady day last; And the said Trustees, and the said Tenants, in so doing, are to be saved harmless by the Decree of the Court. But in case the said Lands are in a greater yearly Value than

the said 300 l. per annum, And that the said Defendant shall at any time signifie so much unto their Lordships, And undertake and sufficiently secure the payment of 300 l. per annum, (quarterly unto the said Plaintiff) by equal portions; to be begin from our Lady day last, then the said Defendant is hereby decreed to pay unto the said Plaintiff, the said yearly sum of 300 l. accordingly, until further Order, as aforesaid: And that the said Trustees are in such Case to permit and suffer the said Defendant, and his Assignes, to receive and enjoy the Rents and Profits of the said Fathers Estate, ( anything herein contained to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding.)

Rob: Dod, Deput. Regist.

Being advertized by a Friend of these irregular Proceedings, and perceiving what a Considerable part of my Estate was aimed at, I addressed my self immediately with this Petition to the Lords Commissioners, August 19.

To the Right Honourable, &c.

The humble Petition of Thomas Ivie Defendant, Husband to Theodosia Ivie, Plaintiff.

Sheweth,

**T**hat several Papers have been brought to your Petitioner, intituled as Orders from your Lordships, but without any Subscription of the Register, or his Deputy.

That at the end of one of the said Papers 'tis mentioned, that unless cause ( at the next Privy Seal ) be shewn to this Court to the contrary by the Defendant, That 300 l. per annum, therein mentioned, shall be decreed: But on what day the next Privy Seal will be, or in what place, is not expressed in the said Paper; Neither can your Petitioner ( by all possible means and industry ) find when and where he may attend your Lordships.

Inasmuch, that your Petitioner hath just Ground to fear ( if any such Order be ) either he may be surpriz'd, or a Decree might pass against him, without his Knowledge of the time, wherein he might make his just Defence, especially all his Papers being at present in the custody of his Solicitor, Mr. COX, who is not in Town.

In tender Consideration whereof, May it please your Honours to declare, whether any such Order was made by the Court; and at what time and place your Lordships have

or will be pleased, peremptorily to appoint, to hear the Defence of your Petitioner, who with all humility and willingness, will attend your Lordships; Hoping by Gods assistance, to give a full Demonstration of his Innocency and Integrity; and to wipe off all the foul Aspersions whatsoever, which have been cast upon him, to ruine both his Person and Estate.

*And your Petitioner shall ever pray, &c.*

All the Return ( that I could obtain from the Lords Commissioners) unto the said Petition, was this; *Let Mr. Ivie attend us, to shew us Cause, according to the last Order, on Tuesday next. 19th of August 1652.*

B. Whitlock,

R. Keeble,

J. Lisle.

On the Tuesday following I did attend in Person, but without any Counsell; all being in the Circuits with the Judges: And if I could have found any, it had been almost impossible to have fully instructed them in the Cause, there being so many Depositions, and those of so great Length.

Whereupon I renewed my humble and earnest Request unto them, with all the Vehemency I could express, That they would make no Decree, before they had heard the merits of the Cause on both sides.

Notwithstanding, I found 'twas their Resolution to signe that irregular Paper, and to declare before-hand, that they had found just Cause for *Alimony*; The Preamble of the Decree being full of Reflections, and conteining several Insinuations against me; all that they thought fit to adde, was this Clause, [*Untill further Order.*] A dear Expression in Chancery, and as costly as the other, [*Valeffe He shew Cause.*]

Now, and not before, was the Order, ( which they commonly call the Decree, having put the Great Seal unto it) delivered unto the Register to enter, which first ought to have been drawn by him, and then perused by Counsel on both sides.

Had any one but heard, what smooth words the Lords Commissioners gave me at this time, telling me, That it should not be prejudicial unto me, and that they would hear my Counsel at any time, come when I would, and that 'twas but a Temporary thing, and that

they would deal tenderly with me, in so tender a Case; as between man and Wife, one would have almost been perswaded, that it had been my duty to have given my consent also: But though there was Honey in their Mouths, yet was there too too much Gall in their Inke, and Wormewood in their Decree.

Had they but considered the Deed of Covenant which (they professed) they had perused, 'twould have appear'd very evident, that there was no shadow for so great allowance, as 300 l. *per annum*: When her Father himself, and my Wife also made to me a Proposition, of giving her the liberty of living where she would, and setting out for her fit allowance, they themselves did desire, no more but 120 l. *per annum*, *Depos. l.*

Besides of the Articles (in my custody) which they caused to be drawn to the same Purpose.

But I suppose the Lords Commissioners were so far from considering what they signed, that they never read the Deed, which they mention; nay, I think, I may safely say; They did not, or would not consider the Act it self, for *Alimony*.

For that Act impowers them, to give only such *Alimony*, as is proportionable to the Fortune which the Woman brought; and that also to be raised out of the Husband Estate: Whereas the truth is, she hath not (in all her Proofs) proved, that she had been, or in probability could ever be worth a Penny to Me.

And as for that Estate, which the Lords Commissioners did decree unto her, 'tis true, I had an equitable Title unto it; but it really did belong to the Heir, at Law, until such time as I had performed some small Covenant.

Inasmuch that Mr. *Stepkins*, his Son and Heir, also was injured by these proceedings of the Lords Commissioners; for which he hath often made his Complaint, as well, as his just Title in Law, though to little purpose.

I know full well, what shadow the Commissioners put on this dealing; but whether it be just and righteous, I submit to your Breast, and that is thus.

That although it was Covenanted, between Mr. *Stepkins* and my Trustees, that in case I did not perform all the Covenants (to which I had obliged my self) then was the said Estate of 240 l. to goe to the use of the right Heirs of the said *Stepkins*, until such time as I should perform: By virtue of this Clause, did young *Stepkins*, lay claim to the said Estate.



Yet say the Commissioners, that Mr. *Stepkins* the Father (Who had reserved unto himself the Remainder of the said Limitation; to me and my Wife) made a VWill; and by that VWill had acquitted me from any further Performance; insomuch that the Estate was now totally belonging unto me.

This I believe my VVife told them; and peradventure shewed them such a VWill; and this is their Ground: But by their leave, I cannot think, till such a VWill be legally proved, That it can be any Ground for them, to give away the Estate in such manner, as they have; upon a bare suggestion of one Party, for whose interest and profit it was.

Certainly had they been as conscientious Judges (as they are Judges of Conscience) they would have first caused her to prove the said VWill, (which then had clear'd the Estate from the claim of my Brother *Stepkins*, and saved me the expences of some Sutes in Chancery, for no other end than to get the Will produced, which to this day, I am not able to doe; Notwithstanding I have a Bill of Complaint depending before them for that purpose)

Neverthelesse all these discouragements, it pleased the Lord to give me a proportionable measure of Patience, to submit unto his correcting hand; and in the most sore Afflictions (which I have undergone) he hath not withheld his loving kindneses from me, nor the sweetneses of his refreshing Spirit; though many Oppressions and Grievances were daily multiplied, and many new Sutes at Law were set on foot against me by my Wifes means, who now seemed justified by them; and my self vilified and undervalued.

Yet was I not clamorous at their Bar, neither was I ever admitted to any private Speeches with them: or indeed did ever seek it (being confident) that my cause wanted the Protection of Justice only, and not favour; but waited, still expecting when they would put their good Promise in Execution, and send for us, and endeavour a cordial Reconciliation between us.

But after two moneths were expired, and hearing nothing from them to that purpose (though many several Friends of Quality had moved them thereunto) I address'd my self with an humble Petition for a hearing.

After it was read, they appointed a day (though it was somewhat far of) yet it did abundantly revive me, hoping that that day would be the end of my trouble; and that then, my reputation and estate, might be repaired; my Person freed from the continual molestation of

of Catchpoles; And my Wife her self (whom I had perfectly forgiven) restored unto my Bosom.

The Order which the Lords made in Answer to my Petition, was this.

*Saturday 29 of April, 1653.*

Between *Theodofia Ivie*, Plaintiff, Wife of *Thomas Ivie*, Defendant.

**V**Pon the Defendants humble Petition, (this day preferr'd to the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners for the Great Seal of England) shewing, That in the unhappy difference semented by evil persons between the said Parties, and the said Plaintiff hath petitioned their Lordships for Alimony, (being separated from her Husband) without his Consent; Thereby intending to live a-part by her self, (contrary to the Marriage Stipulation) to the destruction of the mutual happy Comfort, (that might, and ought to be between parties so nearly joyned) pending with Sute; Their Lordships (as Judges of good Conscience) did often move her to Conformity and Reconcilement, chiefly desired by the said Defendant, but the Plaintiff refused, And by an Order of the 24 of July last, their Lordships were pleased to appoint her 300 l. per annum out of her Fathers Estate, until further Order; And the said Defendant (being daily arrested and troubled for the said Plaintiffs Debts) cannot walk the streets, without molestation, by the Officers and Bailiffs; It was prayed, That some day (as soon as to their Honours should seem meet) may be appointed to hear the Defendants Reasons, and the merits of the Cause, why the said Order should be null'd; To command the Defendant and his wife to be personally before their Lordships at the same time; so that there might be a final Conclusion of these unhappy and unnatural Differences, under which the Defendant hath long groan'd, to his utter Ruine: Their Lordships do thereupon Order, that Counsel on both sides be heard in the Business the first Day of Causes in Trinity Term next.

*John Sandford*, Deput. Regist.

My Hopes and Expectations being now raised from the Dust, I considered with my self, how I might represent the Case between me and my Wife, with the least prejudice to her: for upon some Debatings about the Witnesses I had examined against her, I found the Breach still made wider, by her Lawyers aggravations, than it was really in it self; what was but a scar, they would tear open into a wound; nay, they preferr'd a seeming Rhetorick to far before a Christianity, that rather than they would exasperate, they would speak Point Blank, to the very Papers they held in their hands.

And

And therefore, to prevent the like Inconveniences, and aiming at a perfect Reconciliation, I drew up all (that Counsel could be instructed in, or could offer at the Bar) into writing, and for each Commissioner had a Paper ready to be presented, as follows.

To the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners for the Custody of the Great Seal of England.

**W**Hereas the Draught of an Order was on Friday August the 13th made, and presented unto your Honours by the Counsel of the Plaintiff, and Mr. Lanchie her Solicitor, not entered into the Registers Book, or drawn up by him from any Notes taken in Court, or was ever perused by the Defendants Counsel before it was signed, according to the Rules of the Court; in which Order it was mentioned, that 300l. per annum should be raised out of the Father's Estate, which was seiled at the Marriage upon Sir John Brampton Knight, Orlando Bridgman Esq; and William Booth, to uses, &c. and upon the reading of it, it was Ordered by your Lordships at the same time, that unless the Defendant should shew cause at the next Privy Seal, a Decree should pass accordingly; And whereas it was ordered by another of August the 19th, That on Tuesday following the Defendant should attend, and shew Cause why the said 300l. per annum should not be decreed; May it therefore please your Honours to consider these following Considerations, which are all proved upon Oath, and good Evidence; wherein he hopeth it is sufficiently cleared, that the Plaintiff neither ought to have any Alimony out of that which was her Fathers Estate, or out of her Husbands.

Mrs. Ivis, the Wife of Thomas Ivis, suggesteth by her Petition to the Lords Commissioners, That her Husband hath deserted her, and left her no means to live; That during her Cohabitation with him, she was in danger of her life, and became very weak, and for perill of receiving from him diseases of dangerous consequence, she cannot Cohabite with him, and prays Relief.

The Question is, Whether in this Case she ought to have Alimony.

In which it will be pertinent, to consider the near conjunction that is between Man and Wife, and whether they be of equal Authority, or there be a Superior, and in whom that Superiority resteth.

1. The Original female Ancestor was taken out of Man, and by the Marriage-bond were made one flesh, though several Individuals, like the Celestial Gemini, that makes but one Constellation; but the Government

vernment was placed upon the Man by God himself, who gave the Law in Paradise, saying, Thy desire shall be to thy Husband, and he shall rule over thee, *Gen. 3. v. 16. 1 Cor. 14. 5:34.* and by the Apostle remembred, That Women are commanded to be under obedience; so saith the Law; and that they submit themselves unto their Husbands, as to the Lord that is supreme, *5 Eph. v. 22.* Thus far for the *Divine Law.*

2. The common Law says, that a Woman that is married is not *sui Juris*, but *sub potestate Viri*, hath no Will but her Husbands, though she may have a Stomach; therefore the Civil Acts she does are void in common Law; she can neither take nor give any thing without her Husbands consent; She can have no reparation for any wrong done unto her Person by her self, without her Husband, and the damages that shall be recovered, shall goe to the Husband and not to the Wife; And it is further to be considered the extension of that word *Potestas*; It is of a great latitude, for Sovereign Princes and Governours, though they have rule and power of the People; Yet they cannot beat, wound, or kill the People under them, nor doe any thing to their Persons corporally; but according to their Laws, by Sentence or Judgement: But the Husband hath power of Correction upon the body of his Wife, and Servant, according to his own Judgement, so as he doth not wound nor kill, and is not prohibited by any Law.

3. The Civill Law (as I take it) agrees with the Common Law; then it must follow by necessary consequence, that a married Woman without leave cannot depart from her Husband, which she must evidence by proof, no more than a Servant from his Master, a Subject from his Sovereign into forreign parts, who by his Missives is to return upon forfeit of his Estate; which makes good what was said before, that she is not *sui Juris*, and in some sort expounds and explicates the *potestatem Viri in Vxorem*; for the master may seize and carry away his Servant, if he find him, or implead him that shall keep him, and recover damages for the time he keeps him; so may the Husband by his Wife; which shews the propriety and interest which the Husband hath in his Wife, and for losse of her society and company (though no other harm be done) he shall recover damages against the detainer.

Nay the Husband could not repudiate his Wife, but in case of Adultery; for that the Bill of divorce spoken of in the old Law, was not given by God, but permitted by *Moses*, to prevent a greater mischief; for the *Jews* are cruel men to their Wives, and to prevent



*Vxorcidium*, he gave way to it, *Sed non fuit sic ab initio.*

The Case thus stated upon the impotencies and non-ability of the will of the Wife, and the just Rule and Power of the Husband over her will and Person; tis considerable, whether by Law or Reason, a Wife departing without leave, shall have allowance to live separate, which is called *Alimony*.

*Alimony* is a Thing not known at the Common or Civil Law, but indulged, and brought in by the Pope and his Canons, and very much put in Use by the late High Commission and Prerogative Court of *Canterbury*, wherein, upon Sentence of Separation from Bed and Board given by that Court, the Husband was enjoined to make allowance to the Wife, and the Husband enforced to give security for the payment, &c many times imprisoned upon failure of performance; yet in those cases, both of Bonds and Imprisonments, the Husband upon *Habeas Corpus* returnable in the upper Bench, where by Judgment of that Court, discharged of both, if the Husband cohabit, because the Law saies, *Quos Deus conjunxit, nemo separet*. So as without the Husbands consent no separation could be made, and if no separation, no *Alimony*.

Nor were personall Infirmities or diseases contracted after Mariage sufficient cause of such separation, because she may board though not bed with such a Husband; but where the temper of the Husband was more severe and violent then discreet, That Court by the wisdom of prevention, which is better then the wisdom of remedies, did use by way of caution to take bond for the Husbands orderly usage of his Wife, to prevent the cruelty whereof they had no Jurisdiction, but only in causes and *salute Anima*, and not *pro reformatione Morum*, which belongs to the Common Law, and where upon complaint by the Wife in that kind the Common Law will enforce the Husband to give bond to secure both life and member of his Wife from maim and death.

And certainly *Reason* is against it.

1 *Reason* commands obedience to Superiors, generally the Apostle puts it further for conscience sake, and disobedience is not cherished by any Reason.

2 One end of Marriage is Mutual societie and comfort, would be avoyded by the Act of the Wife, which is not to be admitted upon the petulant Allegation of difference betwixt her and her Husband upon personall Infirmities.

3 Marriage it self, and all the Laws of the Wives subjection and capacity

paciry by so long time pronounced and received, by this meanes would be avoyded.

4 If God himself was pleased to say, it was not good for a Man to be alone, then surely we may safely say, it is not good for a VVoman to be alone; for though they are the weaker Vessel, and have the lesser Reason, yet they have the stronger Passions, and more violent Desires, and so more subject to Temptation and Sin.

5 Lastly, for the inevitable Danger of illegitimate Bastards, and Clandestine Issues (where the VVife is separate) who concealed til the Husbands death, are yet inheritable to his Land (though never begotten by him;) This Inconvenience sadly weighed, and how Epidemically it may run to all Families of this Nation, is of it self a sufficient convincing Reason, to bridle the rash hot appetit of inconsiderable women, and avoid all *Alimony*. But on the other side, If any Husband shall be so unjust to his VVife, and unkind to his own flesh, whom he is bound by Law to maintain, as to separate from her, and will not cohabite with her, *Nisi propter Adulterium*, or will consent to separate, it is most reasonable he should allow her convenient maintenance; else he should take advantage of his own wrong and humour, and VVomen should be in worse case and condition than Servants, who during their contract must have their wages, which between Husband and VVife ends not till death. And it is conceived the Act of Parliament, which impowreth the Lords Commissioners of the Great Seal to allow *Alimony*, chiefly and naturally intends Relief, where the Husband doth repudiate, and not the VVife; the words being upon consideration aswell of the Portion or Estate that hath been paid, or come to the Husband by such VVife as shall pray Relief.

And therefore in this particular Case, it may be very justly insisted, even from the sence and letter of the Act; as also that 'twas Mrs. *Tule* separated her self from her Husband, 'twas not her Husband left her; Nay, after she was gone, he used all affectionated and prudential means to bring her home to Cohabit with him, neither doth he desist in the prosecution of it, but hath several wayes attempted it, even untill this day, and doth still declare and protest his willingness to receive her, whensoever she will Return, and give security for his well Usage of her.

That she wanted nothing before her departure, but was indeed maintained far above her quality, is most cleer from the Depositions, and it is cleer also from the Depositions, that there was no deserting of her by her Husband, but that her departure was absolutely upon Advice and

and consideration designed by her self and her Abettors, especially if your Lordships please to remember those unhandlome correspondencies held by her with Gentlemen under feigned names; her frequenting and meeting them in scandalous houses in *Long-Acre* and other places, at unreasonable times of the night, under the pretence of withdrawing from her Husband (being a Bed) to her Devotion; Those horrid and detestable plots upon *Jane Gilbert*, even to the losing of her life; Her charging her Husband with foul diseases, of which he was cleared upon Oath by the President of the College and other learned Physicians, And also her Contrivancies and Solicitations to her Brother *John Stepkins* to murder her Husband, which appears by the Oath of the said *Stepkins*.

Moreover seeing that there is a Caution in the Act, that the allowance to the repudiated Wife ought to be proportionable to the *Fortune* she brought her Husband: May it therefore please your Honours to understand,

1. That he never received any penny portion as yet, and hath great reason to doubt whether ever he shall.

2. Because the Estate of her Father is at present in the aforesaid Trustees, and not in the Defendant, nay it is so settled on them, that unlesse I can raise and secure 4000 l. more, besides 7000 l. already laid out, they are not obliged, neither will they, nor can they, convey it to the Defendant, as appears by the Indenture of settlement.

3. In case they should convey and settle on the Defendant the said Estate, 'tis only for his life, and no longer; for which Estate, being only 240 l. *per annum*, He has disbursed and laid out far more money than it is worth; this appears from the Indenture (*viz.*) a 1000 l. to Mr. *Stepkins* in ready money, to free the Estate from incumbrances three years since.

The Interest whereof comes to 200 l. In Jewels, Pearls, Amber-greece, Bezoar, &c. to the value of 1200 l. There was also spent in Law to enforce the Trustees, who were kept back and hindred by Mr. *Stepkins* her father, to settle the Estate according to the Covenants, and for the fine and recovery 200 l. more at least, which makes 2600 l.

That notwithstanding all the aforesaid sums of money have been laid out by the Defendant, the Trustees do still refuse to convey the Estate to the Defendant, and the Plaintiffs brother (as Heir at Law) hath since the death of his Father got the possession of the Estate, and receives the Rents, Issues and profits thereof: Infomuch that the De-

Defendant hath been necessitated to expend great sums of money to maintain several Sutes at Law, both against the Trustees and Heir at Law, in preservation of his Estate for life, which he has so dearly bought as afore said.

That by the Plaintiffs means there has been consumed and wasted of his Estate 4000 l. (viz) 3000 l. since marriage spent on her, 500 l. given in money, 100 l. given to Gentlemen of her familiar acquaintance to perswade her to goe into the Country, 300 l. taken in Silks and Plate from the Defendant, whilst that he was at the Court of Aldermen: He has also contracted several great debts to the value of 3000 l. besides 1000 l. spent in this unhappy Sute, and must therefore necessarily (in case 3000 l. *per annum* be taken from him) be cast into prison the most part of his life (he having but 632 l. *per annum* of his own Estate) and that for his life only, both to pay all his debts afore said, and to live on beside.

Excepting the 240 l. *per annum*, which if it be recovered from the Heir of *Stepkins*, and recovered by the Trustees, all which will yield but a scant and bare maintenance for himself, Wife and Family, to raise out of it 3000 l. for the Creditors, and 4000 l. more according to the Indenture of settlement, unlesse the Defendant be acquitted and discharged of the said 4000 l. by the last Will and Testament of the Plaintiffs Father, in whom the remainder of the Estate was, in case the Defendant should have no Issue, or not perform the Covenants which he stands obliged to perform in the said Deed: And though the Defendant is credibly informed, that the said remainder is disposed of to the said Plaintiff, and the Defendant is also acquitted from all performance of any Covenants expressed in the said Deed of Settlement; Yet so it is, that the Plaintiff having got possession of the said Will, and by combination with Sir John *Brampton* Knight, &c. his Son, the sole Executor of it, still keeps and detaineth the said VWill from being legally proved: Infomuch that the Defendant cannot make any benefit of the said Estate, nor by Law enforce the Plaintiff to produce the VWill (she being his VVife.) That this is not a bare suggestion, I doubt not but is very evident to your Lordships, she and her Solicitor *Zanche* having often avouch'd in your Lordships presence, that both there is such a Will, and that your Lordships have seen it: This is also very well known unto her Counsel Mr. *Maynard*, who caused to be delivered unto Sir *W. Row* a true Copy of the said VWill taken from the Original, which was long in his Custody. But such is the Plaintiffs malice to the Defendants Person and Estate



Estate, that she still suppresses and hinders the proving of it, which is the sole cause of the continuance of many great Sutes and vast expences to the Defendant, both with the Heirs at Law, the Executors of the said Will, and Trustees of the said Estate; That both the Defendant and Plaintiff must necessarily be defeated of all hopes of ever enjoying the Fathers Estate for the future, unlesse the 4000 l. aforesaid be raised and disposed of, according as is limited and appointed in the Deed of Settlement, or the said VWill proved; for in Default thereof, the Trustees are obliged by the said Indenture to settle the said Estate on the Plaintiffs Father, and his Heirs for ever.

And the Estate is not as yet recovered by the Defendant, but is still invested in the Trustees, (who are no parties to these proceedings) and in the possession of the Heir at Law; Insomuch that no *Alimony*, as the Defendant is advised by his Counsel, can be ordered from hence, because the Ordinance of Parliament impowreth the Lords Commissioners to allow the maintenance out of the Husbands Estate, not out of any others whatsoever. And the Plaintiff hath or ought to have in her custody 1200 l. worth of Jewels, which were delivered her according to the Indenture of Settlement at the Inter-marriage: And in case the Defendant survive her, ought to be restored to the Defendant, who hath too great reason to suspect that they are wasted and embezzelled; and therefore the Defendant humbly beseecheth your Lordships, that instead of giving her *Alimony*, you will be pleased to enforce her to give good security unto the Defendant, or bring the Jewels into Court, that so he may not be cheated of 1200 l. by the Plaintiff and her Abettors; and unlesse your Honours yie ld to secure the said jewels whilst this cause depends before you, he doth not conceive where or how he can be redressed from any Court of *England*.

That about the beginning of these unhappy differences, it was proposed both by the Plaintiff and her Father, that in case she might have her liberty to live where she would, that she would accept of 120 l. *per annum* for her maintenance, and look on it as a very good provision, which accordingly was agreed upon, and drawn into writing, and engrossed, by and with the consent of Sir *John Brampton* her Uncle, and *Orlando Bridgeman* Esquire, two of her Trustees; her Father also promising that his Estate should be settled according to the Covenants on the Defendant, without further Sute of Law; but the said Defendant was unwilling to seal it, being very tender to Act any thing that might separate him from the continual enjoyment and society of his VVife;

so that 300 l. *per annum*, is more than her self, Father, Trustees and friends did think fitting by 180 l. *per annum*.

That the Petition it self is both false and scandalous, and hath been disproved by several Witnesses; nay the contrary also proved by Persons of Quality, that she lived very plentifully in great abundance, rather beyond, than under her Quality in every respect, as the Defendant hopeth is most visible to your Honours.

That notwithstanding such vast sums have been expended on her by her means, and that the said Defendant is to pay to Creditors 3000 l. and to raise 4000 l. more to be secured unto the Trustees as aforesaid; And that in case he recover the Plaintiffs Fathers Estate, 'twill not with his own, make above 872 l. *per annum*, out of which all these moneys must be raised; and in case 300 l. *per annum* of this shall be taken away out of the Plaintiffs Fathers Estate, which he has dearly bought, and purchased; That 'twill be impossible for the Defendant to avoid perpetual Imprisonment, but must be kept in Gaole, and the Creditors defrauded, and must there perish, and himself be cheated also of 1200 l. worth of Jewels; yet he is most willing to receive her; and take her again, and forget all former Passages whatsoever, that so they may for the future lead a peaceable and godly Life together.

Counsel also I did retain, very many, and great ones; That in Case the Lords should refuse the Papers, and would not hear the Merits of the Cause in Publique, (in regard I might not be wanting, to lose the opportunity of that Time which they had ordered for me) I drew up also to be tendred at the same time (that (if it had been possible) I might have prevented both Reading and Arguing too) this short Petition following.

Theodosia Ivie Plaintiff,

Thomas Ivie Defendant.

To the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners for the Custody of the Great Seal of England,

The humble Petition of Thomas Ivie, Defendant,

Sheweth,

**T**Hat your Petitioner (with much Horror and Amazement) doth consider the great unhappinesse of his future life, if your Lordships shall both separate him from the Society of his Wife, and take from him so great a part of his Estate, having such great debts to pay, as have been made appear to your Lordships.

That he cannot Despair in the infinite Mercy of God, in whose hands are the hearts

hearts and desires of all Mankind, But that his wife ( notwithstanding such vast sums of Money have been wasted, and such odious aspersions cast on him ) may yet return, and take Comfort from her Husband ( being passionately desirous to receive her ) if all Christian and prudent means, may be applied.

That for your Petitioners part, he doth ( as in the presence of God ) forgive her from the bottom of his Soul, and is most willing to Cohabite with her, so long as he liveth on Earth.

That he hath often desired to express unto her, and used all the Industry ( as Man can imagine ) but once to speak with her ( even before any of her friends, to let her know so much ) but could never obtain any such meeting from her.

In Order hereunto, he is very willing that a Godly and Conscientious Divine, ( may be received to live in house with your Petitioner & his wife, ) both to exhort and instruct them in their Duties towards God, and one another; and to perform all Gospel, and Family-Duties amongst them: for certainly the Lord will not deny a blessing on those means which he hath ordain'd; and which is unfeignedly sought after by a broken and contrite Spirit. And your Petitioner will oblige himself to allow any such Minister 50 l. per annum, besides all other conveniences whatsoever.

May it therefore please your Lordships, not to pronounce any such hard Sentence ( as Separation ) but rather enjoin your Petitioner and his Wife to live together; and to appoint any honest and religious Divine to live with them, who may ever be at hand to pray with them, and for them, and to keep up their Spirits in Peace and Unity together.

August 24th  
1652.

And your Petitioner shall pray, &c.  
Thomas Ivie.

When the Day came, and the Counsel began to speak, my hopes were quickly commanded to vanish, and the Counsel to hold their Peace; for they suddenly declared, That they would not hear the Merits of the Cause.

With much pressing, Mr. Lisle read the Petition; And though they took evident notice of it, yet would they not return any Answer to it; or so much as demand of my Wife, ( who stood there laughing in their Presence ) whether she would return to me, or no; Only they were pleased to find fault with that word [ Separation, ] And told my Counsel, That they neither had, or could separate our Persons.

These

These words they had no sooner spoke, but (I confess) I laid hold on; though I had been most hardly and severely dealt withall, in the judgement of those that were present.

Infomuch, That now I did despair, ever to find amongst them, and indeed, did determine to commit my Cause unto God, untill ( in his due time ) he should raise up Judges in our *Israel*, who should execute Righteous Judgement, even upon those Judges themselves.

But in the mean time, I was advised ( which was very agreeable unto my own Disposition, not to leave any thing unattempted, which might be thought advantageous to a Union of Us, ) but to go personally to my Wife, and perswade her my self, to leave those Persons who aymed at both our Ruines, And to return to me, ( passionately willing to receive her.

And if she should, ( notwithstanding ) refuse to speak, or go with me, then to demand her of those Persons who received her into their houses.

Accordinly, ( taking two civil Gentlemen ) I went to her Lodging, but received a Repulse from her, instead of Compliance; and then, seeing Mr. *Williamson* ( who kept the house ) I required from him the person of my Wife, who refusing her, was sued by me.

And upon the Tryal before my Lord Cheif Justice *Roles* ( a renowned Person ) had a Verdict, Judgement and Execution of 100 l. against the said *Williamson*, for detaining my Wife from me.

Many Counsels there were to argue the Case; and the Decree it self ( under the great Seal of *England* ) was opened, read, and shewed the Jury: But my Lord *Roles* quickly stated the resolution of the Case in my behalf, and the Jury gave me 100 l. damages.

*Williamson* ( now finding himself in a great *Dilemma* ) either to deliver up my Wife, or himself, to ruine; and my Wife in so bad a condition, ( notwithstanding her glorious Decree ) that although she had 300 l. *per annum*, yet if she could not take the liberty of her old Companions, or any new one ( wheresoever she should be entertained ) for fear of Judgement and Executions; began to take new Counsel, how to free Mr. *Williamson* and her self from this bondage of living under the Roof of a Husbands House; and the truth is, solicited it to the purpose ( amongst her old *Patrons* ) the Lords Commissioners.

For with all speed, *Williamson* prefers a Bill in Chancery to be relieved against my Execution. And after he had preferred his Bill ( though my Answer was so clear, as it could not admit of one exception ) moved for an *Injunction* ( after Judgement and Execution granted at Law )



Law ) and to protect him for keeping away my Wife ; which was granted in these words, ( as fully as he could desire ) being ingrossed in Parchment and sealed.

**T**He Keepers of the Liberty of England, by Authority of Parliament ; To Thomas Ivie Esquire, and to his Counsellors, Agents, and Solicitors, and every of them, Greeting. It was informed in our Court of Chancery 10 November instant, in the behalf of George Williamson, Pl. against you the said Thomas, that the Pls. Bill is to be relieved against an Action and Judgement, thereupon obtained against the Pl. upon pretence of the said Pls. detaining of your ( the said Defendants Wife ) from you; and it appearing in a Cause of Alimony, between you, the said Defendant, and your Wife, that their Lordships decreed her Alimony, during Separacion ; In which time, she ought to have a Habitation apart from you the said Defendant, as well as a separate maintenance, or else, the Decree were groundlesse : And we conceiving the doings of you ( the said Defendant ) to be altogether unjust, Do command, and by these presents strictly enjoin you the above named Thomas Ivie, and you his said Counsellors, Attorneys, Agents, Solicitors, and every of you, under the pain of 500 l. to be levied of your Lands, Goods and Chattels to our use, That you, and every of you, ( do from henceforth ) surcease and forbear all further Proceedings ( at the common Law ) against the Plaintiff upon the said Action and Judgement thereupon, until the said cause shall be finally heard and determined before us in our said Court ; And this you, nor any of you, may omit in any wise ( under the penalty aforesaid, Witnes, our hands, at Westminster 10 November, 1653.

Vera Copia ex

May.

This *Injunction* ( being now granted, Signed and Sealed, with the Commissioners hands under the great Seal of England ) is the Accomplishment of all their Designs ; and the compleating of my Misery ; though the Courts of Law, both could and have ( in some measure ) relieved me; yet is the power of it restrained by this *Injunction*; which indeed I suppose can be called nothing else, than a perfect *Separation* and *Divorce* : whether the Chancery ( being stiled the high Court ) ever receives from any Parliaments, such an unlimited power as this, It behooves them to make out unto your Highness.

Tis the opinion, both of the greatest and honestest Counsel of England ; That no parallel for this Case, no President of the like Nature, is to be found on Record ; Nay, they are not backward to aver, That it is as contrary to the Word of God, the Law of the Nations, the

Civil Law, the Law of our own Country, as well as the Practice of the Chancery itself.

Once did that Court (by its own Authority) issue out a Sequestration upon a Gentlemans Estate, and it was by very many Persons admired, and murmur'd at; but never could I hear, that they ever sequestred Women from their Husbands.

Were there not a superiour Jurisdiction over this Court, (whose Determinations seems too too Arbitrary,) being grounded solely upon the Opinions (not to say the Passions or Affections) of two or three Erring men, what a miserable Bondage and Slavery were this Nation in? what Benefit could we expect from all the good Laws of former Ages, if their power may be quall'd, or suppress at the pleasure of the Chancery? They might have (for ought I know) made an Injunction also, that I should never complain; and if I had attempted to have made known my Case, to have laid me by the heels.

But blessed be the name of our God *Jehovah*, whose extraordinary Providence hath been visible in this Land, that he hath raised up and setled your Highness to be next under himself the Supreme Dispenser of Justice and Righteousness to these Nations, which the Lord has happily placed under your Highness Government. By which means we have a just confidence to be assur'd, having had many Experiences already of your Highnesses singular piety and justice in those severall stations where the Lord has formerly placed you, That there shall be no more complainings made, either in our streets, or in the very corners of our Country, but shall be heard, and relieved even against the Great Ones amongst us.

Tis your Highness power therefore which I implore; tis only your power can free me from those Fetters which are laid upon me by the Lords Commissioners; only your power that can repair me for the Injuries done, (both to my Person and Estate, which I have undergon) by Reason of my seduced Wife; Tis you alone, that can restore me the Benefit of the Law, against those that have been Incendiaries and Abettors of these unnatural differences between us: That so my Reputation (which hath been a long time clouded) may be made cleer; my Person (which hath continually been molested with Catchpoles by my Wifes means) may be at length free; And that I may be in a condition to satisfy my Creditors (their just debts) whose Purges have supported me; and that a final end may be put to these unnatural differences, concerning my Wife, as in Justice and Conscience shall seem meet unto your Highness.

In order to this, I have deliver'd in my Petition, and the state of my Case, to Mr. Sadler, and Mr. Long, to be delivered unto your Highness. *In these words.*

To the Parliament for the Commonwealth of England.

*The humble Petition of Thomas Ivie Esquire,*

Sheweth,

**T**hat your Petitioners wife very suddenly after her Intermarriage with him, having got from him a Joynture of 1000 l. per annum, with 1000 l. in ready money to be left her at the time of his death, and 1200 l. in Jewels, 600 l. worth of Cloaths, 500 l. in ready money, and accommodation to the value of 3000 l. in less than 18 months time, (and all this without one penny portion with her) hath not only deserted his Company, but hath preferr'd a scandalous Petition to the Lords Commissioners for the Great Seal against him, yet nothing material proved.

That by these unnatural Courses, (he hath caused him to spend 3000 l. in this and Twelve other Sutes at Law; by which means aforesaid, your Petitioner is become indebted at this present time 3000 l. more at least.

That he hath often tendred unto the said Commissioners his Willingness to receive her, and to give any security which they can require, to use her with all loving Respects becoming a good Husband.

Notwithstanding the said Commissioners have allowed her 300 l. per an. Alimony; and refused to hear the Merits of the Cause, though they had ordered it under their hands; and have also granted an Injunction to protect such ( who keep the Person of his wife from him ) contrary to Law.

Insomuch, that your Petitioner hath no Remedy left in Law or Equity ( All which more clearly appears by the State of his Case and Narrative hereunto annexed.)

May it therefore please your Honours to commiserate his sad condition; and (in regard she obstinately refuseth to Cohabit with him in the Quality of a Wife) to vacate the said Order of 300 l. per annum; and to null the said Joynture of 1000 l. per annum, and 1000 l. in ready money; and to enforce her to return the 1200 l. in Jewels, whereby your Petitioner may be enabled to satisfy his Creditors their just debts; and that Reparation and Satisfaction may be made, both to his Reputation and Estate, as shall seem meet to your Honours Wisdoms and Justice.

*And your Petitioner, &c.*

To the Parliament for the Common-wealth of England.

The State of the Case of Thomas Ivis Esquire.

**T**HAT Mr. *Ivis* about October 1649. took to Wife *Theodosia Garret* Widdow, Daughter of *John Stepkins* Esq; on whom, by reason of the great affection, which he bore unto her, he settled 1000*l. per ann. joynture*, and gave also security to leave her 1000*l.* in ready money at the time of his death, and this without any consideration of a Portion from her Father, or any Estate left her by her former Husband, who not only left her without a Joynture, but in debt also.

That the said *Stepkins* perceiving how really Mr. *Ivis* stood affected to his said Daughter, and with what cheerfulness and willingness he was resolved to settle all his Estate for the good and preferment of his said Daughter; was content, that if Mr. *Ivis* would free his the said *Stepkins* Estate, which was 240*l. per annum* then encumbered with several debts, or pay a 1000*l.* towards the same, and deliver into the hands of the said Daughter 1200*l.* in Jewels that then it should be settled on Mr. *Ivis* for his life, and afterwards to the use of his Daughter for her life; And in case, he had no Issue by her, then to the Heirs general of the said *Stepkins*, or such as the said *Stepkins* should limit & appoint.

Whereupon Mr. *Ivis* did deliver unto the said *Theodosia* rich Jewels to the value of 1200*l.* in ready money to the said *Stepkins* to free his Estate accordingly.

That Mr. *Ivis* then expected a reciprocal return of his affection, which he had so cordially demonstrated: But when the said 1000*l.* was paid, and a firm and legal settlement of the Joynture made, and the Jewels delivered to his said Wife, He found great reason to suspect, that 'twas rather his Fortune than himself, which she had wedded: For she not only sought all means to avoid his Company, but chose out those as she thought might be most offensive to him, and such (whom by reason of the scandal they lay under) he had prohibited her to converse with.

Notwithstanding, seeing it was the pleasure of the Lord to unite them in so near a union; Mr. *Ivis* was resolved not to leave any fair and honest motives (either of Purle or Periwasion) unattempted, which might encline her affection towards him; and in order hereunto (there was nothing which she ever proposed, which might be for her content) that he did deny unto her: And in lesse than fourteen Moneths, she expended in apparel, 600*l.* in ready money 500*l.* and



and for other Accommodations about 2800 l. besides the 1200 l. in Jewels, and 1000 l. in money aforesaid; which amounts to 6100 l. Nay, the Gifts were so great he bestowed on her, That he suppoeth, she was even ashamed to request any more from him.

Nevertheles she, by the evil counsel of her Confederates ( while he was at the Court of Aldermen ) did convey out of his house Plate, and rich East-India stuffs, to the value of 300 l. and divers other goods, which were by her and her Confederates carried away and imbezelled.

That Mr. *Ivie* now finding his own Estate, as well as his Wifes Affection, too too visibly declining; and that nothing could attend such an unhappy condition, but Ruine and Dishonour, to prevent both, perswaded his said Wife to retire with him for a while to his Estate in the Country; thinking thereby to take her off from the Temptations of those seducing Persons, who engaged her in such pernicious courses.

But instead of a compliance, he found a greater Obstinaey than ever; neither could her own friends, ( who then perswaded her to leave the City for a while ) prevail with her. And that there might be no Indultry wanting to perswade her, he gave 100 l. to two Persons of her familiar Acquaintance, to be urgent and sollicitous to endeavour the Accomplishment of his desire.

But by the Practises of the said Confederates, she was seduced to the preferring of a vile, scandalous, and false Petition to the Lords Commissioners against Mr. *Ivie* for obtaining *Alimony*; but not one syllable of her suggestions proved against him: Nay, the contrary proved by Mr. *Ivie*, by the severall Testimonies of many Persons of good Quality and Reputation, as appears by the Depositions themselves, besides his own Oath which he made in answer to the scandalous aspersions cast upon him.

Notwithstanding this Vindication, after two years dependance in the Chancery, and the Expences of almost 3000 l. in this unnatural, and twelve other Sutes at Law, ( which were commenc'd against him, by the means of this Sute; ) she obtained from the Lords Commissioners an Order in private for 300 l. *per ann. Alimony*.

( Notwithstanding Mr. *Ivie* was alwayes ready to receive her, and use her in all Respects according to her Quality neither, Mr. *Ivie* ) nor his Counsel being present, Notwithstanding they declared, That they would send for Mr. *Ivie*, ere they would give Judgement in the Case; But never as yet did, nor ever yet heard the Merits of the Cause.

Cause; which (in respect of the proceedings) was contrary to the Rules of the Court; and in respect of the Allowance (in case Mr. *Ivie* had been guilty of the Complaint) contrary to the Act of Parliament.

Having thus Affliction added to Affliction, and being in Debt by the means of his said Wife above 3000 l. And having not wherewithall to sell to pay his Creditors, (And in regard the Reversion of his Estate is settled on his said Wife) he attended almost a year upon the Lords Commissioners for his Relief, that they would be pleased but to grant him a fair hearing upon the Merits of the Cause, in presence of both parties, with their Counsel; which was by their Order accordingly granted, and a Day by them appointed.

But when the Day came, and Mr. *Ivie* had retained to his great charge, many great Counsel, the Lords Commissioners absolutely refused to hear the said Cause; which hath exposed the said Mr. *Ivie* and his Wife to all manner of Temptations, and their Persons and Estates to utter Ruine.

And although at the same time Mr. *Ivie* did Request the said Lords Commissioners to recommend any godly Minister, whom they themselves should chuse to live in house with him and his Wife (as an Expedient to a Peace and Reconciliation between them) for which he obliged himself to allow any such Minister 50 l. *per annum*, besides all other fitting Accommodations whatsoever; yet was this Proposall slighted by them, and laugh'd at by his said Wife, even in the presence of their Lordships.

And since that time Mr. *Ivie* having sued those (who received her, and denyed her unto him) and obtained by just proceedings in Law, a Judgement and Execution against such Persons, The Lords Commissioners have notwithstanding granted their *Injunction* for their *Protection*.

Insomuch, that they have now effected an absolute Separation; which is contrary to the Law of the Nation, and the Act of Parliament for *Alimony* it self; which was declared by my Lord Chief Justice *Roles* upon Reading the Decree for *Alimony*.

FINIS.

es  
ad  
a-  
by  
e-  
of  
p-  
a-  
in  
r.

at  
e-  
ie  
nd  
ds  
n-  
x-  
he  
all  
all  
e-

er,  
w,  
n-  
o-

;  
nt  
ce





# The TRIALL

O F

Mr. *John Gerhard*, Mr. *Peter Vowell*, and  
*Sommerjet Fox*, by the HIGH COURT of  
 JUSTICE sitting in *Westminster Hall* on  
 Friday 30 June, 1654.

With their Charge,

AND

A DECLARATION of the particulars  
 of the whole PLOT to have murdered His  
 Highnesse the Lord Protector, and thole of the Coun-  
 cill, Seized on the Guards, the Lord Mayor, and  
 others, and proclaimed *Charles Stuart King*.

With the names of each person chief in the Designe,  
 and what each of them did act, and were to do therein.

And the Testimonies of the severall VVit-  
 nesses upon Oath, which were Mr. *Wiseman*, Mr.

*Hudson*, *Robert Dale*, *John Hipwell*, Col. *Aldridge*,

*Charles Gerhard*, *John Man*, *Francis Fox*, Mr.

*Wharton*, Mr. *Barnes*, and Mr. *Miners*.

And the severall pleadings and proceedings of their Tryall

Taken in Writing in the Court by one present at their Tryall.

London, Printed by *Robert Ibbison* in Smithfield.

MDC LIV.

# THE TRIAL

Mr. John G. ... and ...  
... by the HIGH COURT of ...

## With their Charge

AND

DECLARATION of the particulars

of the ... have numbered ...



... in the ...

... and the ...

... which were ...

...

...

...

...

Friday 30 June 1654.



H<sup>E</sup> High Court of Justice met this day in the Painted Chamber.

Mr. Bond prayed with them about half an hour.

The Court then sat, and presently adjourned to the Court of Chancery prepared for their sitting; The Lord Commissioner *Liste* was President, Mr. *Phelps* Clerk; Serjeant *Glyn*, Mr. *Prideaux*, and Mr. *Ellis* Council for the Commonwealth.

The Court was called (each member by name) and the Ordinances impowring them read. The Prisoners to be tryed were.

Mr. *John Gerbeard* Gentleman.

Mr. *Peter Vowel*, Schoolmaster of *Islington*.

And *Summerfet Fox*.

*Summerfet Fox* was first called to the Bar, and an Indictment of High Treason read against him, for joyning in a traitorous Design to have murdered his Highness the Lord Protector and divers of his Council, Proclaimed *Charles Stuart* King, seized on the present Guards and Forces, involved the Nation in a bloody war, &c.

*Summerfet Fox* did ingenuously confess the Charge against him upon the main, to be true, and that he is guilty.

Then Mr. *John Gerbeard*, and Mr. *Peter Vowel* were brought to the Bar, and an Indictment to the same purpose as that against *Summerfet Fox*, read against them.

They pleaded not guilty, and denyed every thing.

*Vowel* said that he required a Jury of Twelve of his equals, it being a Law confirmed by *Magna Charta*; and according to the first Article of the Government by the Lord Protector also, that Law being not repealed, and therefore that he might be tryed by his Peers.

The Lord President told him, That the Members of the Court were his Peers, not his Superiors but his Equals, and that they were present now twice twelve as he saw; And that they are to proceed by the power of an Ordinance before them.

It was also told him by Serjeant *Glyn* that he had owned the Jurisdiction of the Court, in pleading not guilty.

*Vowel* said, he was a man ignorant in the Law, and desired advantage might not be taken of his weakness.

The Attorney General *Prideaux* said none desired to take any advantage

of any thing, wished they had not brought themselves into these troubles; that they were there in the name of the Lord Protector and the Commonwealth of England to accuse the Prisoners at the Bar, and to bring in their proof, and the prisoners were to defend themselves as well as they could. And when both sides were heard, it was to be left to the Court to determine, and to judge between them.

And it was declared that the plot was to this effect.

That the Plot was to seize on the Lord Protector and murder him, and some of the Council and others, and Proclaim and bring in *Charles Stuart*, Son of the late King, to be King, which bloody design was to be effected thus.

That the first hatching of the Plot was in England by Mr. *Hinslow*, who was one of the cheife plotters, and others; Mr. *Hinslow* went over from England to France, to acquaint *Charles Stuart* (whom they called their King) with the Design, and Mr. *John Gerard* about that time went over to France also, who had told Mr. *Hinslow* that he would do nothing in it until he had first had approbation from *Charles Stuart*, Mr. *Wise*man was also then in France with them.

Address was made to Prince *Rupert*, and the Design made known to him, desiring him to communicate it to (him they called) the King, who accordingly did, and brought Mr. *Hinslow* to him. But *Charles Stuart* at the first delivered his Judgement in the thing, that he was at present unsatisfied at that time to go on in that design for three reasons.

1 Because it would be dishonourable to him in the esteem of other Princes, in case such a thing should be known, and should not be effected, to come in in such a way.

2 Because it did not seem to him to be feasible, but unlikely to be effected.

3 Because it was not at that time seasonable.

But Prince *Rupert* afterwards did much encourage and perswade, That the design might be carried on, and promised all assistance.

Mr. *Hinslow* and Mr. *Wise*man returned into England, Mr. *Gerard* staid there a while longer, but some weeks after came back also; Mr. *Hinslow* declared to his confederates here in England what overtures had been with *Charles Stuart*, and that Prince *Rupert* had engaged to send ten thousand Scots, English, and French, and the Duke of *York* to come with them to land in *Sussex*, and other places, and that there would be Forces enough ready to assist and joyn with them.

Mr. *Hasler* the Minister was thought on, to have Letters of Credence from *Charles Stuart*, who sent a Letter to him, and that which he desired in case the Plot had taken, was to be made the Master of *Suttons* Hospitall, which Mr. *Hinslow* promised him.

One Master *Phillips* also, and others were treated with, about it, and Master *Gerard* returning from France, the Plot was resolved to be carried



carried on, which was to be effected thus.

1 They were to seize on the Lord Protector, and Murder him, and to do this work they should take the opportunity of his going to *Hampden Court*, which he used to do every Saturday, with a small number slenderly armed; and those that were to do this were Master *Hinsbaw*, and Mr. *John Gerbard* with thirty Horse. Mr. *John Gerbard* to bring twenty five Horse, and Mr. *Hinsbaw* five, which either of them were to engage; Mr. *Gerbard* was something cautious, not to discover who they were he engaged, before an Oath of Secrecie was given, but twenty five hee had undertaken for.

Mr. *Hinsbaw* five were himself, Mr. *Tuedore* the Apothecary, Mr. *Wise-man*, Col. *Aldridge*, and another, and then to seize on the Tower of *London*, and to go on with their work.

2 If that failed, To seize on all the Guards about *Westminster*, which they thought two thousand five hundred sufficient to do, and carry on their work here about *London*; and for that purpose Mr. *Hinsbaw*, Mr. *Gerbard*, and others viewed the Mews and the rest, and was heard to say, What a pitty it was that so slender Guards should not be seized on, and that when the Souldiers were at Nine-pins in the Mews, it was but shooting off a Pistol, and presently to fall on.

3 The last way to have it effected to be thus, That when the Foot Regiments that are for the Guards about *London* were Mustering in *Tuttle Fields*, as they use several times to do, to come into *Tuttle-Fields* and meet them there as of their own party, and when they have laid down their Arms to seize upon them, and have others to be ready at the same time every where to perfect the work. And for this purpose, if they acted this way,

Col. *Finch* with a party of two hundred was to fall into *London*, and do the work in the City.

Major *John Gerbard* to fall on *White-Hall*,

Col. *Hinsbaw* to fall on the Mews,

Col. *Daniel* with two hundred to fall on *Jamess*,

Another to fall into *Southwork*.

And one *Billingly*, a Butcher at *Smithfield* barres, with a Party to fall upon *Islington*; and it was pressed that the opportunity might not be neglected.

And that the work might be the more feasible, they considered how as many of the Souldiery as might be, might be engaged in the business. And the Papists (who had a great hand in the design) gave information of two Souldiers of the Army, that used sometimes to come and hear Mass, and these two they sent a Papist Woman to, who engaged them, and their direction was, To give intelligence at Mr. *Hudsons* house, whither Mr. *Hinsbaw* and others of them frequented.

Master *Vowel* was cautious being a solid man, for his work was not to bear Arms but as a Privie Counsellor to them, and he was to engage Mr. *Billingsly* the Butcher with a Party to seize the Lord Protector's Horse at *Islington*, and him Mr. *Vowel* recommended to be a very fit man for that work.

And they had this Art, to endeavour to make the Lord Protector odious to the people, in turning the design upon him by a Libel, which was scattered up and down *London*, that his Highness and the Army had a design to Massacre all but their Friends in all parts of *England*, and this Libel was written by Mr. *Fenshaw*, which was got printed by one in *Newgate-Market*, and Mr. *Vowel* had one of them.

When the design was discovered, and Mr. *Gerbard* and some others apprehended, Mr. *Vowel* being at Mr. *Hudsons* house, it was said by him, That the design might still go on, though some were discovered; Mr. *Hinsban* and Mr. *Wiseman* came to him to *Islington* to his House, from whence they went to drink their mornings draught, Mr. *Vowel* said, There were enough to do the work still; Mr. *Wiseman* said, There were many Horse to fall on; Mr. *Vowel* said, It might be easily done.

One *Wdarton* in *Black Friars* was to proclaim *Charles Stuart* King, and Col. *Finch* was to seize on the Lord Mayor, and make him to proclaim him; *Somerset Fox* and others were to raise Preenises to joyn in the design, but the Lord Protector going by Water dis-appointed them.

Mr. *Vowel* then said to the Court, That they were not his Peers because they were his Judges, and therefore desired a Jury of twelve of his equals.

Mr. *Predeaux* answered, that so a Jury are the Judges, though they be the prisoners Peers.

The Witnesses against the Prisoners at the Bar were called for.

*John Wiseman* was sworn, and being required to give evidence what he had to say touching the Prisoners at the Bar, avouched the Charge against them, and said,

That he was with Mr. *Hinsban* in *France*, who did communicate by Prince *Rupert* to *Charles Stuart* the design, as is before exprest.

That he saw Mr. *John Gerbard* often-times with Mr. *Hinsban* while he was in *France*, and that he told him in *England*, That there was a Plot to fall on the Lord Protector, and to bring in *Charles Stuart* to be King, and to the rest of that design as is before exprest. And about three weeks after he met Mr. *Hinsban*, and Mr. *John Gerbard*, and they went to *Jamess*, and the *Mews*, *White-Hall*, and other places.

That Mr. *John Gerbard* told one Mr. *Minors* of the business, and how they were to fall on my Lord Protector, and so as before is exprest.

Then Mr. *Gerbard* interrupted him, saying, How should this be done with a company of Geese.

To whom Mr. Prideaux answered, That he knew best how it should be done; and might be had ne're known it, nor gone about it.

Mr. Wiseman went on in his Evidence, and said, That Mr. John Gerbard being at Mr. Hudsons house, did there speak about the Plot to fall on the Lord Protector, &c.

That he had dispute with Mr. Hinsbaw (whom the said Wiseman calleth Brother by some relation) That such a time, and so, and so, would be seasonable (mentioning some particulars.)

That another day he heard Mr. John Gerbard say, That he was to command the Party, and had a Pistol that would discharge three several times, Mr. Hinsbaw, and several other persons being then by; and that he doubted not but it would be seasonable, That there were to be about 30 persons to fall on the Lord Protector, that his brother Hinsbaw said he was to bring five, and Mr. Gerbard 25 to do the work, and named the five aforesaid that his Brother Hinsbaw was to bring, and that his Brother Hinsbaw told him that Mr. John Gerbard was to surprize the Lord Protectors person.

And when the Plot was discovered, he heard his brother Hinsbaw say, that they that were taken were all of Gerbards party and none of his, and that there was a Libel printed to turn the plot on the Lord Protector as is before exprest; and that his Brother Hinsbaw and Mr. Vowel had some of the Papers.

That on Wednesday after it was discovered he was at Mr. Vowels house at Islington, and his brother Hinsbaw was there, and they went to the Kings head to drink, and there his Brother Hinsbaw said, that the business might go on for all it was discovered, many Regiments in several parts being ready rise, enough to carry on the work.

Mr. John Gerbard, and Mr. Peter Vowel the Prisoners at the Bar still denyed all, and said it was not true that he said.

Then Mr. Edward Hudson a Minister that is blind was sworn, who said that Mr. Hinsbaw desired him to write two or three words to the Scots King, and that Mr. Hinsbaw related all the business to him of the design, and the three Objections by Charles Stuart, and P. Raperts answer afterwards, and the three waies to effect it, very much agreeing with the particulars aforesaid; (which need not be here repeated again, because it was the same as before)

When he came to particulars touching the Prisoners at the Bar, he said that Mr. Vowel was his intimate friend, one that he had been much beholden to, and might have perished had not he relieved him. That Mr. Hinsbaw sought to engage Mr. Vowel, but he answered that he thought himself to be unfit, That he said he did not relish. What Mr. Hinsbaw and he did agree he knowes not, What he heard was from Mr. Hinsbaw, That they did meet accidentally, That he did suspect Mr. Vowel to act, but was not sure of it, That he did suppose they had concluded, but was not

sure of any thing. That Mr. Vowel said he was himself unfit to engage, but he would engage a friend if he could, That M. Vowel said there were agreed many horses at Islington which might be surprized, that he would try what he could doe, but whether he did any thing or nor, he knows not.

Mr. Hudson denyed some things he confessed upon oath before Col. Goff Justice of the Peace.

Col. Goff was sworn, He testified that the Examination (which was produced in the Court) was all written from Mr. Hudsons own mouth, and after it was written, it was read to him, to the end that if there had been any mistake it might be altered, and was all by him owned upon his oath, that it was freely testified, and nothing in it extorted from him.

Mr. Hudson said that he was pressed, and that he then said these words, Do not thus afflict an old distressed man, that hath nothing but afflictions upon him.

To which Col. Goff answered, That at first Mr. Hudson denyed all, and would confess nothing until he heard the whole business confessed by another, and that all that was pressed to him was to discharge his conscience in speaking the truth, and that when he heard another to confess the Plot so fully, he desired to be heard again, and then did freely confess according to the Examination.

In the said Examination Mr. Hudson declareth the whole Plot, and the proceedings in France, Charles Stuarts objections, P. Ruperts encouragement, the three ways to effect it, and all the particulars of the design as aforesaid, &c.

And how M. Vowel spake with M. Hinshaw, M. Wiseman and the 2 Soldiers, that Mr. Hinshaw said there were many Cavaliers in Town in the Plot, but would never speak two together, that some relished it well, others doubted. Put in some, that it was agreed to seize on the Lord Protector and the Guards, go, with Drums and Cullour to White-Hall, and the rest of the particulars for bringing in Charles Stuart, for all the witnesses do much agree, &c.

In the said Examination he also said, that Mr. Hinshaw said that they would set up Major Gen. Brown to be in the head of them, by a Letter which they hoped to get from Charles Stuart, and believed that he would accept of it, he being a friend to the King, as they called him.

That it was propounded to M. Vowel, who did consent to do something in it, and did afterwards meet some six times at Mr. Hudsons house.

That Mr. Vowel engaged Billingshy the Butcher aforesaid to be a considerable man, discoursed with him of the number of horse, and Billingshy said to him that the horses at grass might be easily seized.

That Hinshaw told him and Vowel, after Gerard was taken, that none of his party was taken, and that the plot might go on, that the French, English, and Irish from P. Rupert were to land at Rye and other places in Sussex.

The Lord President asked Mr. Hudson whether he did own it, to whom he answered,



answered, that they were together, and such and such things were spoken, but how far Mr. Vowel consented, he knows not.

Then Mr. Robert Dale was sworn, who declared against Mr. Vowel the Prisoner at the Bar, that Mr. Vowel came to his house, and asked him what Arms he had, he told him two Pistols, he said he would buy them of him, he asked for what use, he said that he would tel him hereafter.

That he came with Mr. Hinsbaw, and Mr. Wiseman severall times to his house, who did declare that they had a design to fall on the Lord Protector (and so in all the particulars agreeing with the rest touching the whole business of the design how it should have been done, as hath been before exprest.)

And that Sir Gilbert Pickering, Mr. Strickland, and two or three more of the Council were named that should be cut off.

That they invited him to assist them, and would have ingaged me to fall on in the seizing of them at Islington, and they said there was one to head them, which they should know afterwards, and he said that Mr. Vowel heard these things, And that at another time Mr. Hinsbaw, Mr. Wiseman, and Mr. Plunket met with Mr. Vowel.

And his Examination was read.

That Mr. Vowel asked him whether he had any Arms to accommodate friends, he said two Pistols (and the rest of the discourse as now he had spoken before the Court) only the Examination mentioned a third person of the Council, viz. Ma<sup>r</sup>. Gen. Lambert also to be cut off. That they were provided of an Head, and bad him therefore be sure to rise when he had notice. Then Mr. Hinsbaw seeing two men passing along by where he was, supposing them to be Souldiers said, they should be killed, and he said that Plunket would give notice when they should be ready upon the design to fall on, And that he was ingaged to get as many as he could to assist in the work, That Vowel brought Hinsbaw to his house.

John Hipwel, one of the two Souldiers in the Plot being sworn, said, That a Papist Woman brought him to Mr. Hudsons house, where he met with them, and one told him, That he had something to discover to him if he could join in it.

That he was examined how strong the Guards were, and that Regiment of which he was, and said, the Regiment were 1200; Hee was asked what Ammunition, and other such like questions, to all which he gave answer.

After some discourse he told him, That it was to fall on the Lord Protector, and on the Guards, &c. and so told him the whole design, which he related to the same purpose as those before.

That he was bid to enquire what Cavaliers were in the Regiment, and among the Souldiery, and drink with them, and do what he could to divide the Souldiery, and to make what Party he could for this work, and that when the time should be for action, the Word should bee,  
**FALL ON.**

The next morning hearing some were taken Prisoners, there was much sorrow.

*Yee see the Papists safe at the Helm of this Plot, and they distasteth where we finde help.*

Then Col. Aldridge was sworn, who said, That Mr. *Hinslow* revealed there was a design to have fallen on the Lord Protector, and brought in *Charles Stuart* to be King, and related the particulars much to the purpose as is before exprest, and that *Hinslow* asked him if he would be one; That he made some queries about it, but Mr. *Hinslow* told him, They had great hopes of accomplishing it, and that there was an Officer of their own in the Tower that should free the Prisoners, and put Swords in their hands, and that all should be done upon an instant, and that then they should have money enough.

*Had all mens estates become their prey, they indeed would have had much, but what a sad condition would England then have been in?*

*Then Mr. John Gerhard was caused to withdraw a while.*

Mr. *Charles Gerhard* was next called for, to see what he could say touching the Plot, who declared, That Mr. *Hinslow* had been in France with *Charles Stuart*, and his Brother *John* also, and Mr. *Wiseman* had been there, and made a Narrative of all the proceedings there, agreeing with the rest before; and spake also of several meetings at Ludgate-hill, and Covent Garden; how he met Col. *Finch* at the Piazza, who told him of the design to kill the Lord Protector, seize on the Guards, the Lord Mayor, &c. proclaim *Charles Stuart* King; and the rest of that story of their design, in which he agreed with the former. And that he declared to him, That they were lifting apace, and they had many joyned hereabouts. That Col. *Deane* had listed all that day, that he himself had listed some; That Col. *Finch* had a Party to joyn with him in the City; That another time he had further discourse again with him about it, that they were to meet the next day, and then it was also said, That *Finch* was to command a Party, and that his Brother *John Gerhard* also was to command a Party, and that his Brother *John* was then by, and heard this discourse; and that it was said there was ready about London to seize on several parts in all about two or three thousand, That Col. *Finch* was to seize on the Lord Mayor, Col. *Deane* on *Jameses*, Col. *Häizer* on Col. *Ingolbie* in Southwark (and so named other particulars like what is mentioned before) Told him also the management of the design in France (agreeing with what is mentioned before) and said, He had a Commission from the King (as he called him.) And he spake also of their meeting at Bellisage at Ludgate-hill, where mention was made of his Brother *John Gerhard*, and that *Sowerfen* was there, and engaged in the design; and his was to get in all the Apprentices he could to joyn in it. That at another time *Hinslow* said, they had listed two or three thousand.

Then Mr. *John Gerhard* was called to the Bar again where he appeared with the other two.

Mr. *Charles Gerhard* was then sworn, and upon his oath gave in evidence, after his Brother was brought to the Bar, That the design was to fall on the Lord Protector, &c. (he gave a short Narrative as before) and further said that his Brother *John Gerhard* had been in France. *John Gerhard* Prisoner at the Bar said he confessed it, that he was in France, when they were there, and was sometimes in their company, but denied that he knew any thing of any plot.

Mr. *Charles Gerard* being desired to go on further, said, That Mr. *Hinsbaw* was severall times at his lodgings, and his Brother with him, and talked with him of the design, which his Brother scrupled, but he told him that if it could be accomplished the King (as he called him) would like well of it, That his Brother met Mr. *Hinsbaw* at Covent Garden, who had pen and Inke before him, and talked of the numbers and other particulars, his Brother *John* then in the Room (and he named the particulars as before) But his Brother did not relish it, and was pressed by them, nor did he know that he consented to a 3.

Mr. *Prideaux* told Mr. *Charles Gerard* that he did well to bee as sparing as he could against a Brother, only be carefull to speak the truth, though with the fairest interpretation, because Conscience is neerer than a Brother.

The Lord President also said, that he was not to look upon either the greatnesse of men, or the relation of a Brother in this thing, but to look upon his Conscience, and to look up to his God.

*John Alas* was sworn, who declared the Design in generall, (as the rest, all agreeing) and that Mr. *John Gerard* and others had consulted about it.

That being asked if he would engage in it, he answered yet: That afterwards he went to Bell-sidge, but when he came there, there were *Somerset Fox* and others, and they said he could not have admission, for several were apprehended about it, and they knew not what to do,

*William Dod* was sworn, who gave in evidence, that on Thursday morning in Whitson week, *Somerset Fox* told him that there was a design (as aforesaid, giving him an account of the whole, still all agreeing) But he told him that it was to be kept secret. And that they were to meet about two a clock in the morning about it. That at Bell-sidge he met with *Somerset Fox*, and his cousin *Fox* the next day again, and had the like discourse.

*Francis Fox* being sworn, gave in the like evidence against his Cousin *Somerset Fox*, and that hee was invited to joyn with them, but could not tell what to do.

*John Wharton* was sworn, who said, he keeps a Viſqualling house in *Black Fryers*, and that a Gentleman, a stranger, came to him, and asked him if hee would serve the King, and fell in discourse about his calling; that he told him he had married a poor widow: And that the Gentleman told him that if the Design went on, he might have money enough, and said that hee would find him better imployment. The Gentlemans name, hee said, was *Hinsbaw*, as hee heard afterward. And that hee told him hee would not bee long before he came again. Hee said that hee did beleve they had designed to seize on the Lord Protector, and all the Horse guards. But for his part hee was, when they should give him notice of it, only to proclaime the King, that was all that hee was to do.

Mr. *Barnes* was sworn, who spake of the Designe in generall, much after the same manner as those before.

Mr. *Minors* was the last Witnesse sworn, who gave evidence, that Major *Hinsbaw* told him of the Designe neer *Covent Garden*, and one Mr. *Harison*, *Tudor*, and others, were mentioned. That he asked him if hee would joyn in it. That afterward hee met with *Hinsbaw* in the Pallace yard at *Westminster*, who told him of the Designe, as before. And that Major *John Gerard* was to command

mand a party, and that the businesse was then in good forwardnesse, but Major *John Gerhard* thought it could not yet be accomplished.

And that when Mr. *Hinslow* heard that Mr. *John Gerhard* was taken, hee said that hee might thank himself, for had not he delayed it, the businesse might have been done two days before.

The Prisoners at the Bar were then asked what they had to say for themselves?

Mr. *John Gerhard* said he was falsly accused, and that the Witnesses did not speak truth, and denied that he had any thing to do in the Plot, or knew of it.

Mr. *Vowel* did require of the Court to bee allowed pen, Inke and paper, the Copy of his Charge, and Councill to advise him what defence to make for himself. And pleaded *Magna Charta* again, as before, and the sixt Article of the Government of the Lord Protector.

Sergeant *Glyn* declared, that an Ordinance being declared Law untill the Parliament shall repeal it, is to give the same authority to it which is to an Act of Parliament, every Act being a Law no longer. That the Laws of old of Treason against the King are of force (were this new Ordinance not in being) For it means the Supream Governour; though it names only a King, it hath been made use of for Treason against a Queen, and so is to bee touching a Lord Protector, or any other Supream Governour.

Mr. *Ellis* Councill of the Commonwealth, produced in Court the Government of the Lord Protector, in which that very Article in the conclusion of it, hath a proviso to the 30th Article.

The Attorney Generall *Prideaux* declared, that the Charge having been so fully proved against them, yet they could not but take notice of the ingenuous confession of *Somerset Fox*; but were sorry to see such obstinacy in the other two, after such a barbarous and bloody designe; that they should shew no signes of Repentance: And therefore in behalf of the Commonwealth prayed for Justice from the Court against them.

The Court adjourned into the Painted Chamber, and Ordered that they should have pen, Inke and paper, and any friend to come to them that they should desire in the presence of the Lieutenant of the Tower.

The Court adjourned untill Tuesday next in the afternoon.

FINIS.



REVENGE <sup>3</sup>

FOR

HONOUR.

A

TRAGEDIE,

BY

GEORGE CHAPMAN. K

---



---

*July 5.* LONDON,

Printed for *Richard Marriot*, in *S. Dunstan's*  
Church-yard, Fleetstreet, 1654.

THE

HOLY

TRADITION



1877

Printed by R. & J. Smith, 11, Abchurch Lane, London, E.C. 4.



## *The Persons Acting.*

*Almanzor* Caliph of Arabia.

*Abilqualit* his eldest Son.

*Abraben* his Son by a second Wife,  
Brother to *Abilqualit*.

*Tarifa* an old General, Conqueror of  
Spain, Tutor to *Abilqualit*.

*Mura* a rough Lord, a Souldier, Kins-  
man by his Mother, to *Abraben*.

*Simanthes* a Court-Lord, allyed to  
*Abraben*.

*Selinthus* an honest, merrie Court  
Lord.

*Mefithes* a Court Eunuch, Attendant  
on *Abilqualit*.

*Osman* a Captain to *Tarifa*.

*Gafelles* another Captain.

*Caropia* Wife to *Mura*, first beloved of  
*Abraben*, then of *Abilqualit*.

*Perilinda* her Woman.

*Souldiers, Guard.*

*Mutes, Attendants.*



## PROLOGUE.

**O**ur Author thinks 'tis not i<sup>n</sup> the power of Wit,  
Invention, Art, nor Industrie, to fit  
The several phantasies which in this age  
With a predominant humour rule the Stage.  
Some men cry out for Satyr, others chuse  
Meerly to story to confine each Muse;  
Most like no Play, but such as gives large birth  
To that which they judiciously term mirth.  
Nor wil the best works with their liking crown,  
Except 't be grac'd with part of foole or clown.  
Hard and severe the task is then to write,  
So as may please each various appetite.  
Our Author hopes wel though, that in this Play,  
He has endeavour'd so, he justly may  
Gain liking from you all, unlesse those few  
Who wil dislike, be't ne're so good, so new;  
The rather Gentlemen, he hopes, cause I  
Am a main Actor in this Tragedie:  
You've grac'd me sometimes in another Sphear,  
And I do hope you'l not dislike me here.

---





# REVENGE FOR HONOUR.

## ACTUS PRIMUS. Scena I.

*Enter Selimhus, Gafelles, and Ofman.*

*Sel.* NO murmurings, Noble Captains.

*Gaf.* Murmurings, Cosen?

this Peace is worse to men of war and action  
then fasting in the face o'th' so, or lodging  
on the cold earth. Give me the Camp, say I,  
where in the Sutlers palace on pay-day  
we may the precious liquor quaff, and kisse  
his buxome wife; who though she be not clad  
in Persian Silks, or costly Tyrian Purples,  
has a clean skin, soft thighs, and wholesome corps,  
fit for the trayler of the puissant Pike,  
to sollace in delight with.

*Of.* Here in your lewd Citie,  
the Harlots do avoid us sons o'th' Sword,  
worse then a severe Officer. Besides,  
here men o'th' Shop can gorge their mustie maws  
with the delicious Capon, and fat limbs  
of Mutton large enough to be held shoulders  
o'th' Ram ancouge the 12 Signes, while for pure want  
your souldier oft dines at the charge o'th' dead,  
mong tombs in the great Mosque.

*Sel.* 'Tis beleev'd Coz,  
and by the wisest few too, that i'th' Camp  
you do not feed on pleasant poults; a sallad,

and

and without oyl or vinegar, appeases  
sometimes your guts, although they keep more noise  
then a large pool ful of ingendring frogs.

Then for accoutrements, you wear the Buff,  
as you believ'd it heresie to change  
for linnen: Surely most of yours is spent  
in lint, to make long tents for your green wounds  
after an onslaught.

*Gaf. Coz.* these are sad truths,  
incident to fraile mortals I

*Sel.* You yet crie  
out with more eagernesse stil for new wars,  
then women for new fashions.

*Of.* 'Tis confels'd,  
Peace is more opposite to my nature, then  
the running ach in the rich Usurers feet,  
when he roars out, as if he were in hel  
before his time. Why, I love mischief, Coz,  
when one may do't securely; to cut throats  
with a licentious pleasure; when good men  
and true o'th Jurie, with their frostie beards  
shall not have power to give the noble wofand,  
which has the Steele defied, to th' hanging mercy  
of the ungracious cord.

*Sel.* Gentlemen both,  
and Cozens mine, I do believe 't much pity,  
to strive to reconvert you from the faith  
you have been bred in: though your large discourse  
and praise, wherein you magnifie your Mistris,  
Warr, shall scarce drive me from my quiet sheets,  
to sleep upon a turfe. But pray say, Cozens,  
How do you like your General, Prince,  
is he a right Mars?

*Gaf.* As if his Nurse had lapt him  
in swaddling clouts of Steele; a very *Hector*  
and *Alcibiades*.

*Sel.* It seems he does not relish  
these boasted sweets of warre: for all his triumphs,  
he is reported melancholy.

*Of.* Want of exercise  
renders all men of actions, dul as dormise;  
your Souldier only can dance to the Drum,  
and sing a Hymn of joy to the sweet Trumpet:  
there's no musick like it.

## Revenge for Honour.

7

*Enter Abraben, Mura, and Simanthes.*

*Ab.* I'll know the cause,  
he shall deny me hardly else.

*Mu.* His melancholy,  
known whence it rises once, 't may much conduce  
to help our purpose.

*Gaf.* Pray Coz. what Lords are these ?  
they seem as ful of plot, as Generals  
are in Siege, they're very serious.

*Sel.* That young Stripling  
is our great Emperors son, by his last wife :  
that in the rich Imbroiderys, the Court *Hermes* ;  
one that has hatcht more projects, then the ovens  
in Egypt chickens ; the other, though they cal  
friends, his meer opposite Planet *Mars*,  
one that does put on a reserv'd gravitie,  
which some call wisdom, the rough Souldier *Mura*,  
Governour i'th' *Morocco*s.

*Of.* Him we've heard of  
before: but Cozen, shal that man of trust,  
thy tailor, furnish us with new accoutsements ?  
hast thou tane order for them ?

*Sel.* Yes, yes, you shal  
flourish in fresh habiliments ; but you must  
promise me not to ingage your corporal oaths.  
you will see't satisfied at the next press,  
out of the profits that arise from ransome  
of those rich yeomans heires, that dare not look  
the fierce foe in the face.

*Gaf.* Doubt not our truths,  
though we be given much to contradictions,  
we will not pawn oaths of that nature.

*Sel.* Wel then, this note does fetch the garments :  
meet me Cozens anon at Supper.

*Exeunt Gaf. Of.*

*Of.* Honourable Coz. we will come give our thanks.

*Enter Abilqualis*

*Ab.* My gracious brother,  
make us not such a stranger to your thoughts,  
to consume all your honors in close retirements ;  
perhaps since you from *Spain* return'd a victor,  
with (the worlds conqueror) *Alexander*, you grieve  
Nature ordain'd no other earths to vanquish;  
it's be so, Princely brother, we'll bear part

in your heroique melancholy.

*Abil.* Gentle youth,

press me no farther, I stil hold my temper  
free and unshaken, only some fond thoughts  
of trivial moment, cal my faculties  
to private meditations.

*Sim.* Howsoe're your Hignesse

does please to term them, 'tis meer melancholy,  
which next to sin, is the greatest malady  
that can oppress mans soul.

*Sel.* They say right :

and that your Grace may see what a meer madnesse,  
a very mid-summer frenzy, 'tis to be  
melancholy, for any man that wants no monie,  
I (with your pardon) wil discusse unto you  
all sorts, all sizes, persons and conditions;  
that are infected with it; and the reasons  
why it in each arises.

*Ab.* Learned *Selinthus*,

Let's tast of thy Philosophie.

*Mu.* Pish, 'Tis unwelcome  
to any of judgment, this fond prate;  
I marvel that our Emperor dos permit  
fools to abound ith' Court!

*Sel.* What makes your grave Lordship  
in it, I do beseech you? But Sir, mark me,  
the kernel of the text enucleated,  
I shall confute, refute, repel, refel,  
explode, exterminate, expunge, extinguish  
like a rush candle, this same heresie,  
that is shot up like a pernicious Mushroom,  
to poison true humanitie.

*Ab.* You shall stay and hear a lecture read  
on your disease; you shal, as I love virtue,

*Sel.* First the cause then  
from whence this *status Hypochondriacus*,  
this glimmering of the gizard (for in wild fowl,  
'tis term'd so by *Hypocrites*) arises,  
is as *Averroes* and *Avicen*,  
with *Abenbucar*, *Baruch* and *Abesin*,  
and all the Arabick writers have affirm'd,  
a meer defect, that is as we interpret, a want of

*Abil.* Of what, *Selinthus*?

*Sel.* Of wit, and please your Highnesse,

that



## Revenge for Honour.

9

That is the cause in gen'ral, for particular and special causes, they are all deriv'd from severall wants; yet they must be considerd, pondred, perpended, or premeditated.

*Sim.* My Lord, y'ad best be brief, your Patient will be wearie else.

*Sel.* I cannot play the fool rightly, I mean, the Physician without I have licence to expalcat on the disease. But (my good Lord) more briefly, I shall declare to you like a man of wisdom and no Physician, who deal all in simples, why men are melancholy. First, for your Courties,

*Sim.* It concerns us all to be attentive, Sir.

*Sel.* Your sage and serious Courtier, who does walk with a State face, as he had drest himself ith' Emperors glasse, and had his beard turn'd up by the' irons Roial, he will be as pensive as Stallion after Catum, when he wants suits, begging suits, I mean. Me thinks, (my Lord) you are grown something solemn on the sudden; since your Monopolies and Parents, which made your purse swell like a wet sponge, have been reduc'd to th' last gasp. Troth, it is far better to confesse here, then in a worser place. Is it not so indeed?

*Abil.* What ere he does by mine, I'me sure h'as hit the cause from whence your grief springs, Lord *Simanthos*.

*Sel.* No *Egyptian* Soothsayer has truer inspirations, then your small Courtiers from causes and wants manifold; as when the Emperors count'nance with propitious noise does not cry chink in pocket, no repute is with Mercer, nor with Tailor; nay sometimes too the humor's pregnant in him, when repulse is given him by a Beautie: I can speak this though from no *Memphian* Priest, or sage *Caldean*, from the best *Mistris* (Gentlemen) an Experience. Last night I had a mind t'a comly *Semstres*, who did refuse me, and behold, ere since how like an *As* I look.

*Enter Tarifa.*

*Tar.* What, at your Counsels, Lords? the great *Almanzor* requires your presence, *Mura*; has decree'd

# Revenge for Honour.

the Warr for *Persia*. You (my gracious Lord) Prince *Abilqualer*, are appointed Chief : And you, brave spirited *Abraham*, an Assistant to your victorious Brother : You, Lord *Mura*, destin'd Lieutenant General.

*Abil*. And must I march against the foe, without thy company? I relish not th' employment.

*Tar*. Alas, my Lord, *Tarifa's* head's grown white beneath his helmet ; and your good Father thought it charity to spare mine age from travel : though this ease will be more irksome to me then the toil of war in a sharp winter.

*Abr*. It arrives just to our wish. My gracious brother, I znou shall wait on you : mean time, valiant *Mura*, let us attend my Father. *Exeunt Ab. Mura, Sim.*

*Abil*. Good *Selinthus*, vouchsafe a while your absence, I shall have employment shortly for your trust.

*Sel*. Your Grace shall have as much power to command *Selinthus*, as his best fanci'd Mistress. I am your creature. *Exit.*

*Tar*. Now, my Lord, I hope y'are cloath'd with all those resolutions that usher glorious minds to brave atchievements. The happy genius on your youth attendant declares it built for Victories and Triumphs ; and the proud *Persian* Monarchie, the sole emulous opposer of the Arabique Greatnesse, courts (like a fair Bride) your Imperial Arms, waiting t' invest You Sovereigne of her beauties. Why are you dull (my Lord?) Your cheerful looks should with a prosp'rous augury presage a certain Victory : when you droop already, as if the foe had ravish'd from your Crest the noble Palm. For shame (Sir) be more sprightly; your sad appearance, should they thus behold you, would half unsoul your Army,

*Abil*. 'Tis no matter, Such looks best sute my fortune. Know (*Tarifa*) I'm undispos'd to manage this great Voiage, and must not undertake it.

*Tar*. Must not, Sir ! Is't possible a love-sick youth, whose hopes are fixt on marriage, on his bridal night

should

## Revenge for Honour.

11

Should in soft slumbers languish? that your Arms  
Should rust in ease, now when you hear the charge,  
and see before you the triumphant Prize  
destin'd t' adorn your Valour? You should rather  
be furnish'd with a power above these passions;  
and being invok'd by the mighty charm of Honour,  
flie to atchieve this war, not undertake it.  
I'd rather you had said, *Tarifa* ly'd,  
then utter'd such a sound, harsh and unwelcome.

*Abil.* I know thou lov'st me truly, and durst I  
to any born of woman, speak my intentions,  
the fatal cause which does withdraw my courage  
from this imployment, which like health I covet,  
thou shouldst enjoy it fully. But (*Tarifa*)  
the said discov'ry of it is not fit  
for me to utter, much lesse for thy vertue  
to be acquainted with.

*Tar.* Why (my Lord?)  
my loyaltie can merit no suspicion  
from you of falshood: whatsoere the cause be  
or good, or wicked, 't meets a trustie silence,  
and my best care and honest counsel shall  
indeavour to reclaim, or to assist you  
if it be good, if ill, from your bad purpose.

*Abil.* Why, that I know (*Tarifa*). 'Tis the love  
thou bear'st to honour, renders thee unapt  
to be partaker of those resolutions  
that by compulsion keep me from this Voiage:  
For they with such inevitable sweetnesse  
invade my sense, that though in their performance  
my Fame and Vertue even to death do languish,  
I must attempt, and bring them unto act,  
or perish i'th' pursuance.

*Tar.* Heaven avert  
a mischief so prodigious. Though I would not  
with over-sawcie boldnesse presse your counsels;  
yet pardon (Sir) my Loialtie, which timorous  
of your lov'd welfare, must intreat, beseech you  
with ardent love and reverence, to disclose  
the hidden cause that can estrange your courage  
from its own *Mars*, with-hold you from this Action  
so much ally'd to honour: Pray reveal it:  
By all your hopes of what you hold most precious,  
I do implore it; for my faith in breeding

## Revenge for Honour.

your youth in warrs great rudiments , relieve  
*Tarifa's* fears, that wander into strange  
 unwelcome doubts, lest some ambitious frenzy  
 'gainst your imperial fathers dignitie  
 has late seduc'd your goodness.

*Abr.* No, *Tarifa*,

I ne're durst aim at that unholy height  
 in viperous wickednesse ; a finlesse, harmlesse  
 (if it can be truly term'd one) 'tis my soul  
 labours even to dispaire with : t'faine would out,  
 did not my blushes interdict my language :  
 'tis unchast love, *Tarifa* ; nay, tak't all ,  
 and when thou hast it , pity my misfortunes,  
 to fair *Caropia*, the chaste, vertuous wife  
 to surly *Mura*.

*Tar.* What a fool Desire is !  
 with Giant strengths it makes us court the knowledg  
 of hidden mysteries , which once reveal'd,  
 far more inconstant then the air, it fleets  
 into new wishes, that the coveted secret  
 had slept still in oblivion.

*Abil.* I was certaine  
 'twould fright thy innocence, and look to be  
 besieged with strong dissuasions from my purpose :  
 but be assur'd, that I have tir'd my thoughts  
 with all the rules that teach men moral goodnesse,  
 so to reclaime them from this love-sick looseness ;  
 but they (like wholesome medicines misapplied)  
 fac'd their best operation, fond and fruitlesse.  
 Though I as wel may hope to kiss the Sun-beams  
 'cause they shine on me, as from her to gaine  
 one glance of comfort ; yet my mind, that pities  
 it self with constant tendernesse, must needs  
 revolve the cause of its calamity,  
 and melt i'th' pleasure of so sweet a sadness.

*Tar.* Then y'are undone for ever ; Sir, undon  
 beyond the help of counsell or repentance.  
 'Tis most ignoble, that a mind unshaken  
 by fear, should by a vain desire be broken ;  
 or that those powers no labour e're could vanquish,  
 should be overcome and thral'd by sordid pleasure.  
 Pray (Sir) consider, that in glorious war,  
 which makes Ambition (by base men termed sin)  
 a big and gallant Virtue, y'ave been nur'd,

## Revenge for Honour.

13

lull'd (as it were) into your infant sleeps  
by th' surly noise o'th' trumpet, which now summons  
you to victorious use of your indowments:  
and shall a Mistrisse stay you! such a one too,  
as to attempt, then war it self's more dangerous!

*Abil.* All these perswasions are to as much purpose,  
as you should strive to reinvest with peace,  
and all the joyes of health and life, a soul  
condemn'd to perpetuity of torments.

No (my *Tarifa*) though through all disgraces,  
losse of my honour, fame, nay hope for Empire,  
I should be forc'd to wade to obtain her love;  
those seas of mischief would be pleasing streams,  
which I would hast to bath in, and passe through them  
with that delight thou would'st to victory,  
or slaves long chain'd to th' oare, to sudden freedom.

*Tar.* Were you not *Abilqualis*, from this time then  
our friendships (like two rivers from one head  
rising) should wander a dissever'd course,  
and never meet againe, unlesse to quarrel.  
Nay, old and stiffe, now as my iron garments,  
were you my son, my sword should teach your wildness  
a swift way to repentance. Y'are my Prince,  
on whom all hopes depend; think on your Father,  
that lively Image of majestick goodness,  
who never yet wrong'd Matron in his lust,  
or man in his displeasure. Pray conjecture  
your Father, Countrie, Army, by my mouth  
beseech your pietie to an early pittie  
of your yet unslain Innocence. No attention!  
Farwel: my praiers shall wait you, though my Counsels  
be thus despi'd. Farwel Prince!

*Exit.*

*Abil.* 'Las good man, he weeps.  
Such tears I've seen fall from his manly eyes  
once when ye lost a battel. Why should I  
put off my Reason, Valor, Honour, Virtue,  
in hopes to gain a Beautie, whose possession  
renders me more incapable of peace,  
then I am now I want it? Like a sweet,  
much coveted banquet, 'tis no sooner tasted,  
but it's delicious luxury's forgotten.  
Besides, it is unlawful. Idle fool,  
there is no law, but what's prescribed by Love,  
Natures first moving Organ, nor san ought

what



what Nature dictates to us be held vicious.  
 On then, my soul, and destitute of fears,  
 like an adventurous Mariner, that knows  
 storms must attend him, yet dares court his peril,  
 strive to obtain this happy Port. *Mefithes*  
 (Loves cunning Advocate) does for me besiege  
 (with gifts and vows) her Chastitie. She is  
 compass'd with flesh, that's not invulnerable,  
 and may by Love's sharp darts be pierc'd. They stand  
 firm, whom no art can bring to Love's command.

*Enter Abraben,*

*Abr.* My gracious brother !

*Abil.* Dearest *Abraben*, welcome.

'Tis certainly decreed by our dread Father,  
 we must both march against th' insulting foe.  
 How does thy youth, yet uninur'd to travel,  
 relish the Imploiment ?

*Abr.* War is sweet to those  
 that never have experienc'd it. My youth  
 cannot desire in that big Art a nobler  
 Tutor then you (my Brother:) Like an Eglet  
 following her dam, I shall your honour'd steps  
 trace through all dangers, and be proud to borrow  
 a branch, when your head's coverd ore with Lawrel,  
 to deck my humbler temples.

*Abil.* I do know thee  
 of valiant active soul ; and though a youth,  
 thy forward spirit merits the Command  
 of Chief, rather then Second in an Armie.  
 Would heaven our Roial Father had bestow'd  
 on thee the Charge of General.

*Abr.* On me, Sir !

Alas, 'tis fit I first should know those Arts  
 that do distinguish Valour from wild rashness.  
 A Gen'ral (Brother) must have abler nerves  
 of Judgment, then in my youth can be hop'd for.  
 Your self already like a flourishing Spring  
 teeming with early Victories, the Souldier  
 expect: should lead them to new Triumphs, as  
 if you had vanquish't fortune.

*Abil.* I am not so  
 ambitious (*Abraben*) of particular glories,  
 but I would have those whom I love partake them.  
 This *Persian* war, the last of the whole East

left to be managed, if I can perswade  
the great *Almanzor*, shall be the trophee  
of thy yet maiden Valour. I have done  
enough already to inform Succession,  
that *Abilqualis* durst on fiercest foes  
run to fetch Conquest home, and would have thy name  
as great as mine in Arms, that Historie  
might register, our Familie abounded  
with Heroes, born for Victorie.

*Abr.* Tis an honour,  
which, though it be above my powers, committed  
to my direction, I would seek to manage  
with care above my yeers, and courage equal  
to his, that dares the horrid' st face of danger :  
But 'tis your noble courtesie would thrust  
this mase'line honor (far above his merits)  
on your regardless Brother; for my Father,  
he has no thought tending to your intensions ;  
nor though your goodness should desire, would hardly  
be won to yeild consent to them.

*Abil.* Why, my *Abrahen*,  
w're both his sons, and should be both alike  
dear to's affections ; and though birth hath given me  
the larger hopes and Titles, 'twere unnatural,  
should he not strive t' indow thee with a portion  
apted to the magnificence of his Off-spring.  
But thou perhaps art timorous, lest thy first  
essayes of valour should meet fate disastrous.  
The bold are Fortunes darlings. If thou hast  
courage to venture on this great imploiment,  
doubt not, I shall prevail upon our Father  
t' ordain thee Chief in this brave hopefull Voiage.

*Abr.* You imagine me  
beyond all thought of gratitude ; and doubt not  
that I'll deceive your trust. The glorious Ensignes  
waving i'th' air once, like so many Comets,  
shall speak the Persians funerals, on whose ruines  
we'll build to Fame and Victorie new temples,  
which shall like Pyramids preserve our memories,  
when we are chang'd to ashes.

*Abil.* Be sure, continue  
in this brave minde ; I'll instantly sollicite  
our Father to confirm thee in the Charge  
of General. I'll about it.

*Exit.*

*Abr.*

*Abr.* Farewel gracious Brother.

This haps above my hopes. 'Las, good dull fool,  
I see through thy intents, clear, as thy soul  
were as transparent as thin air or Cristal.

He would have me remov'd, march with the Armie,  
that he mean time might make a sure defeat  
on our aged fathers life and Empire: 't must  
be certain as the light. Why should not his  
with equall heat, be like my thoughts, ambitious?  
Be they as harmles as the prais of Virgins,  
I'll work his ruine out of his intentions.  
He like a thick cloud stands 'twixt me and Greatnesse:

Greatnesse, the wise mans true felicity,  
Honour's direct inheritance. My youth  
wil quit suspicion of my subtil practice:  
then have I surly *Mura* and *Simanthes*,  
my allyes by my dead Mothers bloud, my assistants,  
his Eunuch too *Mesithes* at my service.  
*Simanthes* shall inform the King, the people  
desire Prince *Abilqualis*'s stay; and *Mura*  
whose blunt demeanour renders him oraculous,  
make a shrewd inference out of it. He is my half Brother,  
th' other's my Father; names, meer airie titles!  
Soveraigntie's onely sacred, Greatnesse goodnesse,  
true self-affection Justice, every thing  
righteous that's helpfull to create a King.

*Enter Mura, Simanthes.*

*Abr.* My trustie friends, y'are welcome:  
our fate's above our wishes; *Abilqualis*  
by whatso'ere pow'r mov'd to his own ruine,  
would fain inforce his charge of General on me,  
and stay at home.

*Sim.* Why, how can this conduce  
t' advance our purpose?

*Abr.* Tis the mainest engine  
could ever move to ruine him. *Simanthes*,  
you shall inform our Father, tis the people  
out of their tender love desires his stay.  
You (*Mura*) shall infer my Brothers greatnesse  
with people; out of it, how nice it is and dangerous.  
The air is open here; come, wee'll discourse  
with more secure privacie our purpose.  
Nothing's unjust, unsacred, tends to advance  
us to a Kingdom; that's the height of chance.

ACTUS SECUNDUS. Scena 1.

*Enter Almanzor, Mura, and Simanthes.*

*Al.* **H**OW? not go, *Simanthes*?

*Sim.* My dread Sovereign,  
I speak but what the well affected people  
out of their loyal care and pious duty  
injoyn'd me utter: they do look upon him  
as on your eldest Son, and next Successor,  
and would be loth the *Persian War* should rob  
their eies of light, their souls of joy and comfort,  
this flourishing Empire leave as it were widow'd  
of its lov'd Spouse: They humbly do beseech  
your Majesty would therefore destine some  
more fitting General, whose loss (as heaven  
avert such a misfortune) should it happen,  
might lesse concern the State.

*Al.* 'Tis not the least  
among the blessings Heaven has shovr'd upon us,  
that we are happie in such loving Subjects,  
to govern whom, when we in peace are ashes,  
we leave them a Successor whom they truly reverence:  
A loving people and a loving Sovereign  
makes Kingdoms truly fortunate and flourishing.  
But I beleeve (*Simanthes*) their intents,  
though we confirm them, will scarce take effect:  
*My Abilqualis* (like a Princely Lion,  
in view of's prey) wil scarcely be orecom  
to leave the honour of the *Persian War*,  
in's hopes already vanquish'd by his valour,  
and rest in lazy quiet, while that Triumph  
is ravish'd by another.

*Sim.* With the pardon  
of your most sacred Majestie, 'tis fit then  
your great commands forbid the Princes Voyage:  
boldnesse inforces youth to hard atchievements  
before their time, makes them run forth like Lapwings  
from their warm nest, part of the shel yet sticking  
unto their downie heads. Sir, good successe  
is oft more fatal far then bad; one winning  
cast from a flatter'ring Die tempting a Gamester

to hazard his whole fortunes.

*Mur.* This is dull,  
fruitless Philosophy, he that falls nobly  
winns as much honour by his loss, as conquest.

*Sim.* This rule may hold wel among common men,  
but not 'mong Princes. Such a prince as ours is,  
who knows as wel to conquer mens affections  
as he does enemies, should not be expos'd  
to every new cause, honourable danger.  
Prince *Abilqualis*'s fair and winning carriage  
has stolne possession of the peoples hearts,  
they doate on him since his late Spanish conquest,  
as new made brides on their much coveted husbands;  
and they would pine like melancholy turtles,  
should they so soone lose the unvalued object  
both of their love and reverence: Howsoe're,  
what ere your awful wil (Sir) shall determine,  
as heaven, is by their strict obedience  
held sacred and religious.

*Al.* Good *Simanthes*, let them receive our thanks  
for their true care of our dear *Abilqualis*.  
Wee'l consider of their request, say.

*Sim.* Your highnesse humblest creature.

*Exit.*

*Mu.* I do not like this.

*Al.* Like what? Valiant *Mura*,  
we know thy counsels so supremely wise,  
and thy true heart so excellently faithful,  
that whatsoere displeases thy sage Judgment,  
*Almanzor*'s wisdom must account distastful.  
What is't dislikes thee?

*Mu.* Your Majestie knows me  
a downright Souldier, I affect nor words;  
but to be brief, I relish not your son  
should (as if you were in your tomb already)  
ingross so much the giddie peoples favours.  
'Tis neither fit for him, nor safe for you  
to suffer it.

*Al.* Why, how can they, *Mura*,  
Give a more serious testimony of reverence  
to me, then by conferring their affections,  
their pious wishes, zealous contemplations  
on him that sits the nearest to my heart,  
my *Abilqualis*, in whose hopeful virtues  
my age more glorious then in all my conquests?



## Revenge for Honour.

19

*Mu.* May you prove fortunate in your pious care  
of the Prince *Abilqualis*. But (my Lord)

*Mura* is not so prone to idle language  
(the Parasits best ornament) to utter  
ought, but what (if you'll please to give him audience  
hee'll show you a blunt reason for.

*Al.* Come, I see  
into thy thoughts, good *Mura*; too much care  
of us, informs thy loyal soul with fears  
the Princes too much popularity  
may breed our danger: banish those suspicions;  
neither dare they who under my long reign  
have been triumphant in so many blessings,  
have the least thought may tend to disobedience:  
or if they had, my *Abilqualis*'s goodnesse  
would ne're consent with them to become impious.

*Mu.* 'Tis too secure a confidence betrays  
minds valiant to irreparable dangers.  
Not that I dare invade with a foule thought  
the noble Princes loyalty; but (my Lord)  
when this same many headed beast (the people)  
violent, and so not constant in affections,  
subject to love of novelty, the sicknesse  
proper t'all humane specially light natures,  
do magnifie with too immoderate praises  
the Princes actions, doate upon his presence,  
nay chaine their souls to th' shadow of his foot-steps,  
as all excesses ought to be held dangerous,  
especially when they do aim at Scepters,  
their too much dotage speaks, you in their wishes  
are dead alreadie, that their darling hope  
the Prince might have the Throne once.

*Al.* 'Tis confess'd, all this a serious truth.

*Mu.* Their mad applauses  
oth' noble Prince, though he be truly virtuous,  
may force ambition into him, a mischief  
Sealing the soul with too much craft and sweetness;  
as pride or lust do's minds unstay'd and wanton:  
'tmake s men like poyson'd rats, which when they've swallow'd  
the pleasing bane, rest not until they drink,  
and can rest then much lesse, until they burst with't.

*Al.* Thy words are stil oraculous.

*Mu.* Pray then think  
with what an easie toil the haughty Prince,

# Revenge for Honour.

a demy God by th' popular acclamations,  
 nay, the world's Sovereign in the vulgar wishes,  
 had he a resolution to be wicked,  
 might snatch this diadem from your aged temples?  
 What law so holy, tye of blood so mightie,  
 which for a Crown, minds sanctified and religious  
 have not presum'd to violate? How much more then  
 may the soul dazling glories of a Scepter  
 work in his youth, whose constitution's fierie,  
 as overheated air, and has to fan it  
 into a flame, the breath of love and praises  
 blown by strong thought of his own worth and actions.

*Al.* No more of this, good *Mura.*

*Mu.* They dare already limit your intentions,  
 demand (as 'twere) with cunning zeal (which rightly  
 interpreted, is insolence) the Princes  
 abode at home. I wil not say it is,  
 but I guess, 't may be their subtle purpose  
 while we abroad fight for new kingdoms purchase  
 depriv'd by that means of our faithful succors,  
 they may deprive you of this crown, inforce  
 upon the prince this Diadem; which however  
 he may be loth t' accept, being once possessed of t'  
 and tasted the delights of supreme greatness,  
 hee'l be more loath to part with. To prevent this,  
 not that I think it wil, but that may happen,  
 'tis fit the Prince march. I've observed in him too  
 of late a sullen Melancholly, whence rising  
 i'll not conjecture; only I should grieve, Sir,  
 beyond a moderate sorrow, traitorous practise  
 should take that from you which with loyal blood  
 ours and your own victorious arms have purchas'd.  
 and now I have discharg'd my honest conscience  
 censure on't as you please; henceforth I'me silent.

*Al.* Would thou hadst been so now, thy loyal fears  
 have made me see how miserable a King is,  
 whose rule depends on the vain people suffrage.  
 Black now and horrid as the face of storms  
 appears al *Abilqualis* lovely vertues,  
 because to me they only make him dangerous,  
 and with great terror shall behold those actions  
 which with delight before we view'd, and dotage;  
 like Mariners that bless the peaceful seas,  
 which when suspected to grow up tempestuous,

## Revenge for Honour.

21

they tremble at. Though he may still be virtuous,  
'tis wisdom in us, to him no injustice,  
to keep a vigilant eye o're his proceedings  
and the wild peoples purposes.

*Enter Abil.*

*Al. Abilqualis.*

come to take your leave, I do conjecture.

*Abil.* Rather, Sir, to  
your gracious licence, I may still at home  
attend your dread commands, and that you'd please  
to nominate my hopeful brother *Abraben*  
(in lieu of me) chief of your now raised Forces  
for th' *Persian* expedition.

*Al.* Dare you (Sir) presume to make this suit to us?

*Abil.* Why? (my royal Lord)

I hope this cannot pull your anger on  
your most obedient Son: a true affection  
to the young Prince my brother, did beget  
this my request; I willingly would have  
his youth adorn'd with glorie of this conquest.  
No tree bears fruit in Autumn, 'less it blossome  
first in the Spring: 'tis fit he were acquainted  
in these soft years with military action,  
that when grown perfect man, he may grow up too  
perfect in warlike discipline.

*Al.* Hereafter

we shall by your appointment guide our Counsels.  
Why do you not intreat me to resigne  
my Crown, that you the peoples much lov'd minion  
may with't impale your glorious brow? Sir, henceforth  
or know your duty better, or your pride  
shall meet our just wak'd anger. To your Charge,  
and march with speed, or you shall know what 'tis  
to disobey our pleasure. When y'are King,  
learn to command your Subjects; I will mine (Sir.)  
You know your Charge, perform it.

*Exit Alm. and Mura.*

*Abil.* I have done.

Our hopes (I see) resemble much the Sun,  
that rising and declining cast large shadows;  
but when his beams are dress'd in's midday brightnesse,  
yeelds none at all: when they are farthest from  
successe, their guilt reflection does display  
the largest shows of events fair and prosperous.  
With what a settled confidence did I promise

my

my self, my stay here, *Mura's* wish'd departure ?  
 when stead of these, I finde my fathers wrath  
 destroying mine intentions. Such a fool  
 is self-compassion, soothing us to faith  
 of what we wish should hap. while vain desire  
 of things we have not, makes us quite forget  
 those w<sup>e</sup> are possess'd of.

*Enter Abrah.*

*Abr.* Alone the engine works  
 beyond or hope or credit. How I hug  
 with vast delight, beyond that of stoln pleasures  
 forbidden Lovers taste, my darling Mistress,  
 my active Brain ! If I can be thus subtle  
 while a young Serpent, when grown up a Dragon  
 how glorious shall I be in cunning practise ?  
 My gracious brother !

*Abil.* Gentle *Abrah.*, I  
 am griev'd my power cannot comply my promise :  
 my Father's so averse from granting my  
 request concerning thee, that with angrie frowns  
 he did expresse rather a passionate rage,  
 then a refusall civil, or accusom'd  
 to his indulgent disposition.

*Abr.* Hee's our Father,  
 and so the tyrant Custome doth inforce us  
 to yeeld him that which fools call natural,  
 when wise men know 'tis more then servile duty,  
 a slavish, blind obedience to his pleasure,  
 be it nor just, nor honourable.

*Abil.* O my *Abrah.*,  
 these sounds are unharmonious, as unlookt for  
 from thy unblemish'd innocence : though he could  
 put off paternal pietie, 't gives no priviledg  
 for us to wander from our filial dutie :  
 though harsh, and to our natures much unwelcom  
 be his decrees, like those of Heaven, we must not  
 presume to question them.

*Abr.* Not, if they concern  
 our lives and fortunes ? 'Tis not for my self  
 I urge these doubts ; but 'tis for you, who are  
 my Brother, and I hope, must be my Sovereigne,  
 my fears grow on me almost to distraction :  
 Our Father's age betrayes him to a dotage,  
 which may be dang'rous to your future safetie ;

## Revenge for Honour.

23

he does suspect your loyaltie.

*Abil.* How, *Abraben*?

*Ab.* I knew 'twould start your innocence; but 'tis truth, a sad and serious truth; nay his suspicion almost arriv'd unto a settled faith that y<sup>e</sup> are ambitious.

*Abil.* 'Tis impossible.

*Ab.* The glorious shine of your illustrious vertues are grown too bright and dazling for his eyes to look on as he ought, with admiration; and he with fear beholds them, as it were, through a perspective, where each brave action of yours survey'd though at remotest distance, appears far greater then it is. In brief, that love which you have purchas'd from the people that sing glad Hymns to your victorious fortunes, betraies you to his hate; and in this Voiage which he inforces you to undertake, he has set spies upon you.

*Abil.* 'Tis so: afflictions

do fall like hailstones, one no sooner drops, but a whole Showre does follow. I observ'd indeed, my *Abraben*, that his looks and language was dress'd in unaccustom'd clouds, but did not imagine they'd presag'd so fierce a tempest. Ye gods, why do you give us gifts and graces, share your own attributes with men, your virtues, when they betray them to worse hate then vices? But *Abraben*, prithee reconfirm my feares by testimonial how this can be truth; for yet my innocence with too credulous trust sooths up my soul, our father should not thus put that off which does make him so, his sweetnesse, to feed the irregular flames of false suspicions and soul tormenting jealousies.

*Ab.* Why, to me,

to me (my Lord) he did with strong Injunctions give a solicitous charge to overlook your actions. My *Abraben* (quoth he) I'me not so unhappie, that like thy brother thou shouldst be ambitious, who does affect, 'fore thy ag'd Fathers ashes, with greedie-lust my Empire. Have a strict and cautious diligence to observe his carriage, 'twil be a pious care. Mov'd with the base

indig-



indignity, that he on 'me should force  
 the office of a spy; your spy, my noble  
 and much lov'd brother : my best manhood scarce  
 could keep my angry tears in ; I resolv'd  
 I was in duty bound to give you early  
 intelligence of his unjust intentions,  
 that you in wisdom might prevent all dangers  
 might fall upon you from them, like swift lightning,  
 killing 'cause they invade with sudden fierceness.

*Abil.* In afflicting me, misery is grown witty.

*Ab.* Nay besides (Sir)

the sullen *Mura* has the self same charge too  
 consign'd and settled on him; which his blind  
 duty will execute. O brother, your  
 soft passive nature, do's like jet on fire  
 when oyls cast on't, extinguish: otherwise,  
 this base suspicion would inflame your sufferance,  
 nay make the purest loyalty rebellious.  
 However, though your too religious piety  
 forces you 'ndure this foul disgrace with patience,  
 look to your safety, brother, that dear safety  
 which is not only yours, but your whole Empires:  
 for my part, if a faithful brothers service  
 may ought avail you, tho against our father,  
 since he can be so unnaturally suspicious,  
 as your own thoughts command it.

Enter *Selintus* and *Mesithes*.

*Sel.* Come, I know,  
 although th'ast lost some implements of manhood  
 may make thee gracious in the sight of woman,  
 yet th'ast a little engine, call'd a tongue,  
 by which thou canst overcome the nicest female,  
 in the behalf of friend. Insooth, you Eunuchs  
 may well be stil'd Pimps-royal, for the skill  
 you have in quaint procurement.

*Mes.* Your Lordship's merry,  
 and wou'd inforce on me what has been your  
 office far oftner than the cunningst Squire belonging  
 to the smock transitory. May't please your Highness.

*Abil.* Ha! *Mesithes*.

*Ab.* His countenance varies strangely, some affaire  
 the Eunuch gives him notice of, 't should seem,  
 begets much pleasure in him.

*Abil.* Is this truth?

*Mes.*

# Revenge for Honour.

25

*Mef.* Else let me taste your anger.

*Abil.* My dear *Abraham*,  
wee'l march to night, prethee give speedie Notice  
to our Lieutenant *Mura*, to collect  
the forces from their severall quarters, and  
draw them into *Battalia* on the plain  
behind the Citie, lay a strict command  
he stir not from the Ensigne till our self  
arrive in person there. Be speedie, brother,  
a little hastie business craves our presence.  
We wil anon be with you, my *Methises*.

*Exeunt Abil. & Mef.*

*Sel.* Can your grace imagine  
whether his highness goes now?

*Ab.* No, *Selimbus*;  
canst thou conjecture at the *Eunuchs* business?  
what ere it was, his countenance seem'd much altered:  
I'd give a talent to have certain knowledge  
what was *Mefishes* message.

*Sel.* I'll inform you  
at a far easier rate. *Mefishes* business  
certes concern'd a limber petticoate,  
and the smock soft and slipperie; on my honour,  
has been providing for the Prince, some female  
that he takes his leave of *Ladies* before  
ere his departure.

*Ab.* Not improbable, it may be so.

*Sel.* Nay, certain (Sir) it is so:  
and I believe, your little bodie earne  
after the same sport. You were once reported  
a wag would have had business of ingendring  
with surly *Mura's* Lady: and men may  
conjecture y<sup>e</sup> are no chaster then a vot'rie:  
yet though she would not satisfy your desires,  
there are as handsome *Ladies* will be proud  
to have your Grace inoculate their stocks  
with your graft-royal.

*Ab.* Thou art *Selimbus* still,  
and wilt not change thy humor. I must go  
and find out *Mura*; so farwel *Selimbus*,  
thou art not for these wars, I know.

*Exit.*

*Sel.* No truly,  
nor yet for any other, 'less't be on  
a naked yielding enemy; though there may  
be as hot service upon such a foe

as on those clad in steel: the little Squadron, as they are called,  
we civill men assault body to body, and oft carry wild-fire, about them privately, that findges us ith' service from the crown even to the sole, nay sometimes hair and all off. But these are transitory perills. *Enter Gafillet, Osman.* modt wch Couzens,

I thought you had been dancing to the drum. Your General has given order for a march this night, I can assure you.

*Gaf.* It is Couzen, something of the soonest; but we are prepar'd at all times for the journey.

*Sel.* To morrow morning may serve the turn though. Hark you, Couzens mine; if in this Persian War, you chante to take a handsome she Captive, pray you be not unmindfull of us your friends at home; I will disburse her ransome, Couzens, for I've a month's mind to try if strange flesh, or that of our own Country has the compleater relish.

*Of.* We will accomplish thy pleasure, noble Couzen.

*Sel.* But pray do not take the first say of her your selves. I do not love to walk after any of my kindred ith' path of copulation.

*Gaf.* The first fruits shall be thy own, dear Couz. But shall we part (never perhaps to meet agen) with dry lips, my right honoured Coz?

*Sel.* By no means, though by the *Alcharen* wine be forbidden, you Souldiers in that case make't not your faith. Drink water in the Camp, when you can purchase no other liquor; here you shall have plenty of wine, old and delicious. I'll be your leader, and bring you on, let who will bring you off. To the encounter, come let us march, Couzens. *Exeunt Omnes.*

*Sing.*

*Scena*

# Revenge for Honour

27

## Scena Secunda.

*Enter Abilqualis, Caropia, and Mesfbes, Perilinda.*

*Car.* No more, my gracious Lord, where real love is needlesse are all expressions ceremonious: the amorous Turtles, that at first acquaintance strive to expresse in murmuring notes their loves, do when agreed on their affections change their chirps to billing.

*Abil.* And in feather'd arms incompass mutually their gawdy necks.

*Mesf.* How do you like these love tricks, *Perilinda*?

*Per.* Very well; but one may sooner hope from a dead man to receive kindness, than from thee, an Eunuch. You are the coldest creatures in the bodies, no snow-balls like you.

*Mesf.* We must needs, who have not that which like fire should warm our constitutions, the instruments of copulation, girl, our toys to please the Ladies.

*Abil.* *Caropia*, in your well becoming pity of my extream afflictions and stern sufferings, you've shown that excellent mercy as must render what ever action you can fix on, virtuous. But Lady, I till now have been your tempter, one that desired hearing, the brave resistance you made my brother, when he woo'd your love, only to boast the glory of a conquest which seem'd impossible, now I have gain'd it by being vanquisher, I my self am vanquish'd your everlasting Captive.

*Car.* Then the thraldome will be as prosperous as the pleasing bondage of palms, that flourish most when bow'd down fastest; Constraint makes sweet and easie things laborious, when love makes greatest miseries seem pleasures. Yet 'twas ambition (Sir) join'd with affection that gave me up a spoil to your temptations. I was resolv'd, if ever I did make a breach on matrimonial faith, 't should be

with him that was the darling of kind fortune  
 as well as liberall nature; who possesse<sup>d</sup>  
 the height of greatnesse to adorn his beauty;  
 which since they both conspire to make you happy,  
 I thought 't would be a greater sin to suffer  
 your hopefull person, born to sway this Empire,  
 in loves hot flames to languish, by refusal  
 to a consuming feaver, then t'infringe  
 a vow which ne're proceeded from my heart  
 when I unwillingly made it.

*Abil.* And may break it with confidence, secure from the  
 least guilt, as if 't had only in an idle dream  
 been by your fancy plighted. Madam, there  
 can be no greater misery in love,  
 than separation from the object which  
 we affect; and such is our misfortune  
 we must ith' infancy of our desires  
 breath at unwelcome distance; ith' mean time,  
 lets make good use of the most precious minutes  
 we have to spend together.

*Car.* Else we were unworthy to be titled lovers; but  
 I fear loath'd *Mara* may with swift approach  
 disturb our happinesse.

*Abil.* By my command hee's mustring up our forces.  
 Yet *Mesithes*, go you to *Abraben*, and with intimations  
 from us, strengthen our charge. Come my *Caropia*,  
 love's wars are harmlesse, for who ere do's yeild,  
 gains as much honor as who wins the field.

## ACTUS TERTIUS SCENA I.

*Enter Abilqualit and Caropia, as rising from  
 bed, Abraben without, Perilinda.*

*Br.* Open the door, I must and will have entrance  
 unto the Prince my brother, as you love  
 your life and safety and that Ladies honor,  
 whom you are lodg'd in amorous twines with, do not  
 deny me entrance to you, I am *Abraben*,  
 your loyal brother *Abbraben*.

*Abil.* 'Tis his voice,



and there can be no danger in't, *Caropia*,  
be not dismay'd, though w<sup>e</sup> are to him discover'd.  
your fame shall taste no blemish by't. Now brother,  
'tis something rude in you, thus violently  
to presse upon our privacies.

*Abr.* My affection  
shall be my Advocate, and plead my care  
of your lov'd welfare, as you love your honour,  
haste from this place, or you'l betray the Lady  
to ruin most inevitable. Her husband  
has notice of your being here, and's comming  
on wings of jealousy and desperate rage  
to intercept you in your close delights.  
In breif, I over heard a trusty Servant  
of his i<sup>th</sup> Camp come and declare your highnesse  
was private with *Caropia*: at which tidings  
the sea with greater haste when vext with tempests,  
so sudden and boystrous, flies not towards the shore,  
then he intended homewards. He by this  
needs must have gain'd the City; for with all my power  
I hasted hitherward, that by your absence  
you might prevent his view of you.

*Abil.* Why? the slave  
dare not invade my person, had he found me  
in fair *Caropias* armes: 'twould be ignoble,  
now I have caus'd her danger, should I not  
defend her from his violence. I'll stay  
though he come arm'd with thunder.

*Abr.* That will be  
a certain means to ruin her: To me  
count that cure, I'll stand between the Lady,  
and *Mura's* fury, when your very sight,  
giving fresh fire to th' injury, will incense him  
gainst her beyond all patience.

*Car.* Nay, besides  
his violent wrath breaking through his allegiance,  
may riot on your person. Dear my Lord  
withdraw your self, there may be some excuse  
when you are absent thought on, to take off  
*Mura's* suspicion: by our loves, depart  
I do beseech you. Hapless I was born  
to be most miserable.

*Abil.* You shall over-rule me.  
Better it is for him with unhallowed hands

to act a sacriledg on our Prophets tombe  
then to profane this purity with the least  
offer of injurie; be careful *Abraben*,  
to thee I leave my heart. Farwel *Caropia*,  
your tears inforce my absence. *Exit. Abil.*

*Abr.* Pray hast my Lord  
lest you should meet the inrag'd *Mura*: now Madam  
where are the boasted glories of that virtue,  
which like a faithful Fort withstood my batt'ries?  
demolish'd now, and ruin'd they appear;  
like a fair building totter'd from its base  
by an unruly whirlewind, and are now  
instead of love the objects of my pitie.

*Car.* I'm bound to thank you Sir, yet credit me;  
my sin's so pleasing 't cannot meet repentance.  
Were *Mura* here, and arm'd with all the horrors  
rage could invest his powers with; not forgiven  
Hermits with greater peace shal hast to death,  
then I to be the Martyr of this cause,  
which I so love and reverence.

*Abr.* 'Tis a noble  
and wel becoming constancie, and merits  
a lover of those Supreme eminent graces,  
that do like ful winds swel the glorious Sails  
of *Abilqualis*'s dignitie and beautie I  
yet Madam, let me tel you, though I could not  
envie my brothers happinesse, if he  
could have enjoy'd your priceless love with safetie,  
free from discoverie, I am afflicted  
beyond a moderate sorrow, that my youth  
which with as true a zeal, courted your love,  
should appear so contemptible to receive  
a killing scorn from you: yet I forgive you,  
and do so much respect your peace, I wish  
you had not sin'd so carelessly to be  
betray'd ith' first fruitions of your wishes  
to your suspicious husband.

*Car.* 'Tis a fate Sir,  
which I must stand, though it come dress'd in flames,  
killing as circular fire, and as prodigious  
as death presaging Comets: there's that strength  
in love, can change the pitchie face of dangers  
to pleasing formes, make ghastly fears seeme beauteous;  
and I'm resolv'd, since the sweet Prince is free

from

from *Mura's* anger, which might have been fatal if he should here have found him, unresistless I dare his utmost fury.

*Abr.* 'Twill bring death with's sure as stifling dampe; and 'twere much pittie so sweet a beautie should unpined fall betrai'd to endlesse infamie; your husband knowes only that my brother in your chamber was entertained; the servant that betrayed you, curse on his diligence, could not affirm he saw you twin'd together: yet it is death by the law, you know, for any Ladies at such an hour, and in her husbands absence, to entertain a stranger.

*Car.* 'Tis considered Sir, and since I cannot live to enjoy his love, I'll meet my death as willingly as I met *Abilqualis's* dear embraces.

*Abr.* That were too severe a crueltie. Live *Caropia*, til the kind destinies take the loath'd *Mura* to their eternal Mansions, til he fall either in war a sacrifice to fortune, or else by stratagem take his destruction from angry *Abilqualis*, whose fair Empreffe you were created for: there is a mean yet to save th' opinion of your honour spotlesse, as that of Virgin innocence, nay, to preserve, (though he doth know (as certainly he must do) my Brother have enjoy'd thee) thee stil precious in his deluding fancie.

*Car.* Let me adore you if you can give effect to your good purpose. But tis impossible.

*Abr.* With as secure an ease 't shall be accomplish'd as the blest desires of uncross'd lovers: you shall with one breath dissolve these mists that with contagious darknesse threaten the lights both of your life and honour. Affirm my brother ravi'sh'd you.

*Car.* How my Lord?

*Abr.* Obtained by violence entry into your chamber where his big lust seconded by force, despite of yours and your Maids weak resistance surpris'd your honor: when 't shall come to question,

my

my brother cannot so put off the truth,  
he owes his own affection and your whiteness,  
but so acknowledg it a rape.

*Car.* And so by saving mine, betrays his fame and safety,  
to the lawes danger, and your fathers justice,  
which with impartial doome will most severely  
sentence the Prince, although his son.

*Abr.* Your fears  
and too affectionate tendernesse wil ruine  
all that my care has builded. Sure, *Mesfiter*  
has (as my charge injoin'd him) made relation  
to him of *Abilqualis's* affliction. See your Husband,  
resolve on't, or y<sup>e</sup> are miserable. *Enter Mura.*

*Mu.* Furies,  
where is this lustful Prince, and this lascivious  
Strumpet? ha *Abraham*, here?

*Abr.* Good Cozen *Mura*,  
be not so passionate, it is your Prince  
has wrought your injury; resolve to bear  
your crosses like a man: the great'st afflictions  
should have the greatest fortitude in their sufferings  
from minds resolv'd and noble. 'Las poor Ladie,  
'twas not her fault; his too unruly lust  
'tis, has destroy'd her puritie.

*Mu.* Ha, in tears!  
Are these the liverie of your fears and penitence,  
or of your sorrows (minion) for being rob'd  
so soon of your Adulterer?

*Abr.* Fie, your passion:  
is too unmannerly; you look upon her  
with eyes of rage, when you with grief and pitie  
ought to surveigh her innocence. My Brother,  
degenerate as he is from worth, and meerly  
the beast of lust, (what fiends would fear to violate)  
has with rude insolence destroyed her honor,  
by him inhumane ravished,

*Tar.* Good Sir be  
so merciful as to set free a wretch  
from loath'd mortalitie, whose lifes so great  
and hateful burden now sh<sup>e</sup>'s lost her honor:  
'Twill be a friendly charitie to deliver  
her from the torment of it.

*Mu.* That I could  
contract the soul of universal cage

## Revenge for Honour.

33

into this swelling heart, that it might be  
as ful of poisonous anger as a dragons  
when in a toile insnar'd. *Caropias* ravished !  
Me thinks the horror of the sound should fright  
to everlasting ruine, the whole world ,  
start natures Genius.

*Abr.* Gentle Madam, pray  
withdraw your self, your sight, til I have wrought  
a cure upon his temper, wil but adde  
to his affliction.

*Car.* You're as my good Angel,  
I'll follow your directions.

*Exit.*

*Abr.* *Cozen Mura,*  
I thought a person of your masculine temper,  
in dangers fostred, where perpetual terrors  
have been your play-fellows, would not have resented  
with such effeminate passion a disgrace,  
though ne're so huge and hideous.

*Mu.* I am tame,  
collected now in all my faculties,  
which are so much oppress'd with injuries ,  
they've lost the anguish of them: can you think, Sir,  
when all the winds fight, the inrag'd billows  
that use to imprint on the black lips of clouds  
a thousand brinie kisses, can lie stil,  
as in a lethargie? that when baths of oyl  
are pour'd upon the wild irregular flames  
in populous Cities, that they'll then extinguish ?  
Your mitigations adde but seas to seas,  
give matter to my fires to increase their burning,  
and I ere long enlightned by my anger  
shall be my owne pile, and consume to ashes.

*Abr.* Why, then I see indeed your injuries  
have ravished hence your reason and discourse,  
and left you the meere prostitute of passion.  
Can you reaire the ruins you lament so  
with these exclames ? was ever dead man call'd  
to life again by fruitful sighs? or can  
your rage reedifie *Caropias* honour,  
slain and betray'd by his foul lust? Your manhood,  
that heretofore has thrown you on all dangers,  
me thinks should prompt you to a noble vengeance,  
which you may safely prosecute with Justice,  
to which this crime, although he be a Prince,



Renders him liable.

*Mu.* Yes, I'll have justice  
or I'll awake the sleepy Deities,  
or like the ambitious Gyants wage new wars  
with heaven it self, my wrongs shall steel my courage,  
and on this vicious Prince like a fierce Sea-breach  
my just wak'd rage shall riot till it sink  
in the remorselesse eddie, sink where time  
shall never find his name but with disgrace  
to taint his hatefull memory.

*Abr.* This wildnesse neither befit your wisdom nor your courage,  
which should with settled and collected thoughts  
walk on to noble vengeance. He before  
was by our plots proscrib'd to death and ruine  
to advance me to the Empire; now with ease  
we may accomplish our designs

*Mu.* Would heaven  
I nere had given consent, o'recome by love  
to you to have made a forfeit on my allegiance,  
'tis a just punishment, I by him am wrong'd,  
whom for your sake I fearlesse fought to ruin.

*Abr.* Are you repentant grown, *Mura*? this softnesse?  
ill suits a person of your great resolves,  
on whom my fortunes have such firm dependance.  
Come, let *Caropia's* fate invoke thy vengeance  
to gain full mastery o're all other passions,  
leave not a corner in thy spacious heart  
unfurnish'd of a noble rage, which now  
will be an attribute of glorious justice:  
the law you know with loss of sight doth punish  
all rapes, though on mean persons; and our father  
is so severe a Justicer, not blood  
can make a breach upon his faith to justice.  
Besides, we have already made him dangerous  
in great *Almanzors* thoughts, and being delinquent  
he needs must suffer what the meanest offender  
merits for such a trespass.

*Mu.* I'me awake now,  
the lethargy of horror and amaze  
that did obscure my reason, like those dul  
and lazy vapors that o'reshade the Sun,  
vanish, and it resumes its native brightness.  
And now I would not but this devil Prince  
had done this act upon *Caropia's* whiteness,

## Revenge for Honour.

35

since 't yeilds you free access unto the Empire,  
The deprivall of's sight do's render him incapable  
of future soveraignty.

*Abr.* Thou'rt in the right,  
and hast put on manly considerations:  
*Caropia* (since shee's in her will untainted)  
ha's not forgon her honor: he dispatc'd once,  
as we will have him shortly, 't shall go hard else,  
a tenant to his marble, thou agen  
wedded in peace maist be to her pure vertues,  
and live their happy owner.

*Mu.* I'll repair  
to great *Almanzor* instantly, and if  
his partial piety do descend to pittie,  
I will awake the Executioner  
of justice, death, although in sleep more heavy  
than he can borrow from his natural coldness;  
on this good sword I'll wear my causes justice  
till he do fall its sacrifice.

*Abr.* But be sure  
you do't with cunning secresie, perhaps,  
should he have notice of your just intentions,  
he would repair to th' Army, from which safeguard  
our best force could not pluck him without danger  
to the whole Empire.

*Mu.* Doubt not but I'll manage  
with a discreet severity my vengeance,  
invoke *Almanzors* equity with sudden  
and private haste.

*Abr.* Mean time  
I go put a new design in practice  
that may be much conducing to our purpose.  
Like clocks, one wheele another on must drive,  
affairs by diligent labor only thrive. *Exeunt.*

## Scena Secunda.

*Enter Selinthus, Gaselles, Osman, and Souldiers.*

*Sel.* No quarrelling good Couzens, lest it be  
with the glasse, 'cause 'tis not of size sufficient  
to give you a magnificent draught. You will  
have fighting work enough when you're in th' wars,  
do not fall out among your selves.

*Of.* Not pledg  
my peerlesse Mistresse health? Souldier, thou'rt mortall,  
if thou refuse it.

*Gaf.* Come, come, he shall pledg it,  
and 'twere a Tun. Why, w<sup>e</sup> are all as dull  
as dormise in our liquor: Here's a health  
to the Prince *Abilqualis*.

*Soul.* Let go round:  
I'd drink't, were it an Ocean of warm bloud  
flowing from th<sup>e</sup> enimie. Pray, good my Lord  
what news is stirring?

*Sel.* It should seem, Souldier,  
thou canst not read; otherwise the learn'd Pamphlets  
that lie about the streets, would satisfie  
thy curiositie with news; they'r true ones,  
full of discreet intelligence.

*Of.* Cosens, thal's have a Song? here is a Souldier  
in's time hath sung a dirge unto the foe  
oft in the field.

*Soul.* Captain, I have a new one,  
the Souldiers Joy 'tis call'd.

*Sel.* That is an harlot.  
Preethee be musicall, and let us taste  
the sweetnesse of thy voice.

*A Song.*

*Gaf.* Whist, give attention.

*Soul.* How does your Lordship like it?

*Sel.* Very well.

And so here's to thee. There's no drum beats yet,  
and 'tis cleer day; some hour hence 'twill be  
time to break up the Watch. Ha! young Lord *Abraban*,  
and trim *Mefishes* with him! what the divel  
does he make up so early? He has been  
a bat-fowling all night after those Birds,  
those Ladie-birds term'd wagtails; what strange business  
can he have here, tro?

*Enter Abr. Mef.*

*Abr.* 'Twas wel done, *Mefishes*!  
and trust me, I shal find an apt reward,  
both for thy care and cunning. Preethee hast  
to Lord *Simanthes*, and deliver this  
note to him with best diligence, my dear Eunuch;  
thou'rt halfe the soul of *Abraban*:

*Mef.* I was borne  
to be intituled your most humble vassal;  
I'll hast to the Lord *Simanthes*.

*Exit.*

*Sel.*

*Sel.* How he cringes !  
These youths that want the instruments of Manhood,  
are very supple in the hams.

*Abr.* Good-morrow  
to noble Lord *Selintus*: what companions  
have you got here thus early ?

*Sel.* Blades of metal,  
tall men of war, and 't please your Grace, of my  
own blood and family, men who gather'd  
a sallad on the enemies ground, and eaten it  
in bold defiance of him ;  
and not a Souldier here but's an *Achylles*,  
valiant as stoutest *Mirmidon*.

*Abr.* And they  
never had juster cause to show their valor ;  
the Prince my dearest brother, their Lord General's  
became a forfeit to the stern laws rigour ;  
and 'tis imagin'd, our impartial father,  
wil sentence him to lose his eyes.

*Gaf.* Marry heaven  
defend, for what, and 't like your Grace!

*Abr.* For a fact  
which the severe law punishes with loss  
of natures precious lights; my tears wil scarce  
permit me utter 't: for a rape committed  
on the fair wife of *Mura*.

*Of.* Was it for nothing else, and please your Grace ?  
ere he shal lose an eie for such a trifle,  
or have a haire diminish'd, we wil  
lose our heads ; what, hoodwink men like sullen hawks  
for doing deeds of nature ! I'me asham'd  
the law is such an Ass.

*Sil.* Some Eunuch Judg,  
that could not be acquainted with the sweets  
due to concupiscencial parts, invented  
this law, I'll be hang'd else. 's Life, a Prince,  
and such a hopeful one, to lose his eyes,  
for satisfying the hunger of the stomach  
beneath the wast, is crueltie prodigious,  
not to be suffer'd in a common-wealth  
of ought but geldings.

*Abr.* 'Tis vain to sooth  
our hopes with these delussions, he wil suffer  
less he be reskued. I would have you therefore

if you ow any service to the Prince,  
my much lamented brother, to attend  
without least tumult 'bout the Court, and if  
there be necessity of your ayd, I'll give you  
notice when to imploy it.

*Sel.* Sweet Prince, wee'll swim  
in blood to do thee or thy brother service.  
Each man provide their weapons.

*Abr.* You will win  
my brothers love for ever, nay my father,  
though hee'll seem angry to behold his justice  
deluded, afterwards when his rage is past,  
will thank you for your loyalties: Pray be there  
with all speed possible; by this my brothers  
commanded 'fore my father, I'll go learn  
the truth, and give you notice: pray be secret  
and firm to your resolves.

*Exit.*

*Sel.* For him that flinches  
in such a cause, I'll have no more mercy  
on him. Heres *Tarifa*  
the Princes sometimes Tutor, *Mura* with him  
a walking towards the Court, let's take no notice  
of them, lest they discover our intentions  
by our grim looks. March fair and softly *Conzens*,  
wee'll be at Court before them.

*Enter Tarifa and Mura*

*Tar.* You will not do this, *Mura*!

*Mu.* How *Tarifa*?

will you defend him in an act so impious?  
Is't fit the drum should cease his furlly language,  
when the bold Souldiers marches, or that I  
should passe o're this affront in quiet silence,  
which Gods and men invoke to speedy vengeance?  
which I will have, or manhood shall be tame  
as Cowardice.

*Tar.* It was a deed so barbarous,  
that truth it self blushes as well as justice  
to hear it mention'd: but consider *Mura*,  
he is our Prince, the Empires hope, and pillar  
of great *Almanzors* age How far a publick  
regard should be prefer'd before y our private  
desire of vengeance! which if you do purchase  
from our impartial Emperors equity,  
his loss of sight, and so of the succession,  
will not restore *Caropia* to the honor



# Revenge for Honour.

39

he ravish't from her. But so foule the cause is,  
I rather should lament the Princes folly  
than plead in his behalf.

*Mur.* 'Tis but vain,  
there is your warrant, as you are high Marshal,  
to summon him to make his speedy appearance  
'fore the Tribunall of *Almanzor*;  
so pray you execute your office.

*Exit.*

*Tar.* How one vice  
can like a small cloud when't breaks forth in showers,  
black the whole heaven of vertues! O my Lord,  
that face of yours which once with Angell brightnesse  
cheer'd my faint sight, like a grim apparition  
frights it with ghastly terror: you have done  
a deed that startles vertue till it shakes  
as it got a palsie. I'me commanded  
to summon you before your father, and  
hope you'l obey his mandate.

*Enter Abil-  
qualis,  
Mans, whif-  
pring, seem  
to make pro-  
testations.  
Exeunt.*

*Abil.* Willingly,  
what's my offence, *Tarifa*?

*Tar.* Would you knew not,  
I did presage your too unruly passions  
would hurry you to some disast'rons act,  
but ne're imagin'd you'd have been so lost  
to masculine honor, to commit a rape  
on that unhappy object of your love,  
whom now y've made the spoil of your foul lust,  
the much wrong'd wife of *Mura*.

*Abil.* Why, do's *Mura* charge me with his *Caropia*'s rape?

*Tar.* This warrant sent by your angry father, testifies  
he means to appeach you of it.

*Abil.* 'Tis my fortune, all natural motions when they  
approach their end, hast to draw to't with accustom'd  
swiftnesse. Rivers with greedier speed run neere  
their out-falls, than at their springs. But I'me resolv'd,  
let what happen that will, I'll stand it, and defend  
*Carpoia*'s honor, though mine own I ruin;  
Who dares not dye to justifie his love,  
deserves not to enjoy her. Come, *Tarifa*,  
what e're befall, I'me resolute. He dies  
glorious, that falls loves innocent sacrifice.

*Exeunt.*

Actus

## ACTUS QUARTUS. Scena I.

*Enter Almanzor, Abilqualis, Tarifa and Mura.*

*Al.* NO more *Tarifa*, you'l provoke our anger,  
if you appear in this cause so solicitous,  
the act is too apparent: nor shal you  
need (injur'd *Mura*) to implore our justice,  
which with impartial doome shall fall on him  
more rigorously, then on a strange offender.  
*O Abilqualis*, (for the name of Son,  
when thou forsookst thy native virtue, left thee;)   
Were all thy blood, thy youth and fortunes glories  
of no more value, then to be expos'd  
to ruine for one vice; at whose name only  
the furies start, and bashful fronted justice  
hides her amaz'd head? But it is now bootless  
to shew a fathers pitie, in my grief  
for thy amiss. As I'me to be thy Judg,  
be resolute, I'll take as little notice,  
thou art my off-spring, as the wandring clouds  
do of the showers, which when they've bred to ripenesse,  
they straight disperse through the vast earth forgotten.

*Abil.* I'me sorrie Sir, that my unhappie chance  
should draw your anger on me; my long silence  
declares I have on that excelling sweetnesse,  
that unexampled pattern of chaste goodnesse; *Caropia* acted  
violence. I confels,  
I lov'd the Ladie, and when no perswasions  
serv'd to prevail on her, too stubborn, incens'd,  
by force I fought my purpose and obtain'd it;  
nor do I yet (so much I prize the sweetnesse  
of that unvalued purchase) find repentance  
in any abject thought; what ere falls on me  
from your sterne rigor in a cause so precious,  
will be a pleasing punishment.

*Al.* You are grown  
a glorious malefactor, that dare brave thus  
the awful rod of justice! Lost young man,  
for thou'rt no child of mine, dost not consider  
to what a state of desperate destruction  
thy wild lust has betray'd thee! What rich blessings

(that

## Revenge for Honour.

41

(that I may make thee sensible of thy sins  
by showing thee thy suffering) hast thou lost  
by thy irregular folly ! First my love,  
which never more must meet thee, scarce in pitie ;  
the glorie flowing from thy former actions  
stopt up for ever ; and those lustful eies,  
by whose deprival (thou'rt depriv'd of being  
capable of this Empire) to the law,  
which wil exact them, forfeited. Cal in there  
a Surgeon, and our Mutts to execute this act  
of justice on the unworthie traitor, upon whom  
my just wak'd wrath shall have no more compassion,  
then the incens'd flames have on perishing wretches  
that wilfully leap into them.

*Enter Surg. Mutts.*

*Tar.* O my Lord,  
that which on others would be fitting justice,  
on him your hopeful though offending son,  
wil be exemplar crueltie ; his youth Sir,  
that hath abounded with so many vertues,  
is an excuse sufficient for one vice :  
he is not yours only, hee's your Empires,  
destin'd by nature and successions priviledg,  
when you in peace are shrowded in your marble,  
to weild this Scepter after you. O do not,  
by putting out his eies, deprive your Subjects  
of light, and leave them to dul mournful darknesse.

*Al.* 'Tis but in vain, I am inexorable.

If those on which his eyes hang, were my heart strings,  
I'de cut them out rather then wound my Justice ;  
nor dos't besit thy vertue intercede  
for him in this cause horrid and prodigious ;  
the crime 'gainst me was acted ; 't was a rape  
upon my honour, more then on her whitenesse ;  
his was from mine derivative, as each stream  
is from its spring ; so that he has polluted  
by his foul fact, my fame, my truth, my goodnesse,  
strucken through my dignitie by his violence :  
nay, started in their peaceful urnes, the ashes  
of all my glorious Ancestors, defil'd  
the memorie of their stil descendent vertues ;  
nay with a killing frost, nip't the fair blossomes,  
that did presage such goodly fruit arising  
from his own hopeful youth.

*Mur.* I ask but justice ;

those eyes that led him to unlawful objects,  
tis fit should suffer for't a lasting blindness;  
the Sun himself, when he darts rayes lascivious,  
such as ingender by too piercing fervence  
intemperate and infectious heats, straight wears  
obscuritie from the clouds his own beams raises.  
I have been your Souldier Sir, and fought your battails;  
for all my services, I beg but justice,  
which is the Subjects best prerogative,  
the Princes greatest attribute; and for a fact,  
then which, none can be held more black and hideous,  
which has betray'd to an eclipse the brightest  
star in th' heaven of vertues: the just law  
does for't ordain a punishment, which I hope  
you the laws righteous guider, wil according  
to equitie see executed.

*Tar.* Why! that law  
was only made for common malefactors,  
but has no force to extend unto the Prince,  
to whom the law it self must become subject.  
This hopeful Prince, look on him, great *Almanzor*;  
and in his eyes, those volumes of all graces,  
which you like erring Meteors would extinguish:  
read your own lively figure, the best storie  
of your youths noblest vigor; let not wrath (Sir)  
o'recome your pietie, nay your humane pity.  
'Tis in your brest, my Lord, yet to shew mercie;  
that precious attribute of heavens true goodnesse,  
even to your self, your son! me thinks that name  
should have a power to interdict your Justice  
in its too rigorous progress.

*Abil.* Dear *Tarifa*,  
I'me more afflicted at the intercessions,  
then at the view of my approaching torments,  
which I wil meet with fortitude and boldness,  
too base to shake now at one personal danger,  
when I've incountred thousand perils fearless;  
Nor do I blame my gracious fathers Justice,  
though it precede his nature. I'd not have him  
(for my sake) forfeit that for which hee's famous,  
his uncorrupted equitie, nor repine  
I at my destinie; my eies have had  
delights sufficient in *Caropia's* beauties,  
to serve my thoughts for after contemplations;

## Revenge for Honour.

43

nor can I ever covet a new object,  
since they can ne're hope to encounter any  
of equal worth and sweetness.  
Yet hark *Tarifa*. to thy secrecie  
I wil impart my dearest, inmost counsels;  
if I should perish, as 'tis probable  
I may, under the hands of these tormentors;  
thou maist unto succession show my innocence;  
*Caropia* yeilded without least constraint,  
and I enjoy'd her freely.

*Tar.* How my Lord?

*Abil.* No words on't,  
as you respect my honour! I'd not lose  
the glorie I shall gain by these my sufferings;  
come grim furies, and execute your office. I wil stand you,  
unmov'd as hills at whirlwinds, and amidst  
the torments you inflict, retain my courage.

*Al.* Be speedie villaines.

*Tar.* O stay your cruel hands,  
you dumb ministers of injur'd Justice,  
and let me speak his innocence ere you further  
afflict his precious eye-sight.

*Al.* What does this mean, *Tarifa*!

*Tar.* O my Lord,  
the too much braverie of the Princes spirit  
'tis has undone his fame, and pul'd upon him  
this fatal punishment; 'twas but to save  
the Ladies honour, that he has assum'd  
her rape upon him, when with her consent  
the deed of shame was acted.

*Mar.* 'Tis his fears  
makes him traduce her innocence: he who did not  
stick to commit a riot on her person,  
can make no conscience to destroy her fame  
by his untrue suggestions.

*Al.* 'Tis a basenesse  
beyond thy other villanie (had shee yeilded,)  
thus to betraie for transitorie torture,  
her honour, which thou wert ingag'd to safeguard  
even with thy life. A son of mine could never  
show this ignoble cowardize: Proceed  
to execution, I'll not hear him speak,  
he is made up of treacheries and falshoods.

*Tar.* Wil you then



be to the Prince so tyrannous? Why, to me  
just now he did confess his only motive  
to undergoe this torment, was to save  
*Caropia's* honour blameless.

*Abil.* I am more troubled  
Sir, with his untimely frenzie,  
then with my punishment; his too much love  
to me, has spoild his temperate reason. I  
confess *Caropia* yeilded! Not the light  
is half so innocent as her spotlesse virtue.  
'T was not wel done, *Tarifa*, to betray  
the secret of your friend thus, though Shee yeilded:  
the terror of ten thousand deaths shall never  
force me to confess it.

*Tar.* Agen, my Lord, even now  
he does confess, she yeilded, and protests  
that death shall never make him say shee's guiltie:  
the breath scarce pass'd his lips yet.

*Abil.* Haplesse man,  
to run into this lunacie!  
Fie *Tarifa*,  
so treacherous to your Friend!

*Tar.* Agen, agen,  
Wil no man give me credit?

*Enter Abrah.*

*Abr.* Where is our roial father? where our brother?  
As you respect your life and Empires safetie,  
dismiss these tyrannous instruments of death  
and crueltie unexemplified. O Brother,  
that I should ever live to enjoy my eie-sight,  
and see one halfe of your dear lights indanger'd.  
My Lord, you've done an act, which my just fears  
tels me, wil shake your Scepter! O for heavens sake,  
look to your future safetie; the rough Souldier  
bearing their much lov'd General, My good Brother  
was by the law betrai'd to some sad danger,  
have in their pietie beset the pallace;  
think on some means to appease them, ere their furie  
grow to its ful unbridled height; they threaten  
your life, great Sir: pray send my brother to them,  
his sight can only pacifie them.

*Al.* Have your Champions!  
We wil prevent their insolence, you shall not  
boast, you have got the Empire by our ruine.

## Revenge for Honour.

45

Muts, Strangle him immediately.

*Abr.* Avert

such a prodigious mischief, heaven, Hark, hark  
they're entred into th' Court; desist you monsters,  
my life shal stand betwixt his and this violence,  
or I with him wil perish. Faithful Souldiers,  
hast to defend your Prince, curse on your slowness.  
Hee's dead; my fathers turn is next. O horror,  
would I might sink into forgetfulnesse!  
What has your furie urg'd you to?

*Enter, Enter.*

*Al.* To that

which who so murmurs at, is a faithlesse traitor  
to our tranquillitie. Now Sir, your business,

*Enter Simantbest*

*Sim.* My Lord, the Citie

is up in arms, in rescue of the Prince;  
the whole Court throngs with Souldiers.

*Al.* 'T was high time

to cut this viper off, that would have eat his passage  
through our very bowels to our Empire.

Nay, we wil stand their furies, and with terror  
of Majestie strike dead these insurrections.

*Enter Souldiers.*

Traitors, what means this violence?

*Abr.* O dear Souldiers,

your honest love's in vain; my Brother's dead,  
strangled by great *Almanzor's* dire command,  
ere your arrival. I do hope they'll kill him  
in their hot zeal.

*Al.* Why do you stare so, traitors?

'twas I your Emp'ror that have done this act,  
which who repines at, treads the self same steps  
of death that he has done. Withdraw and leave us;  
wee'd be alone. No motion! Are you statues?  
Stay you, *Tarifa* here. For your part, *Mura*,  
you cannot now complain but you have justice;  
so quit our presence.

*Of.* Faces about, Gentlemen.

*Exeunt.*

*Abr.* It has happ'ned

above our wishes, we shall have no need now  
to imploy your handkercher. Yet give it me.  
You'r sure 'tis right, *Simantbest*.

*Al.* *Tarifa*,

I know the love thou bearest Prince *Abilqualis*  
makes thy big heart swell as 't had drunk the fume  
of angry Dragons. Speak thy free intentions,

*Deserv'd*

Deserv'd he not this fate ?

*Tar.* No : You're a Tyrant,  
one that delights to feed on your own bowels,  
and were not worthie of a Son so vertuous.  
Now you have tane his, add to your injustice,  
and take *Tarifa's* life, who in his death,  
should it come flying on the wings of torments,  
would speak it out as an apparant truth :  
the Prince to me declar'd his innocence,  
and that *Caropia* yeelded.

*Al.* Rise *Tarifa*;  
we do command thee, rise : a sudden chilnesse,  
such as the hand of winter casts on brooks,  
thrills our ag'd heart. I'll not have thee ingross  
sorrow alone for *Abilqualis's* death :  
I lov'd the boy well, and though his ambition  
and popularitie did make him dangerous,  
I do repent my furie, and will vie  
with thee in sorrow. How he makes death lovely !  
Shall we fix here, and weep till we be statues ?

*Tar.* Til we grow stiff as the cold Alablasters  
must be erected over us Your rashnesse  
has rob'd the Empire of the greatest hope  
it ere shall boast agen. Would I were ashes.

*Al.* He breathes (me thinks :) the over-hastie soul  
was too discourteous to forsake so fair  
a lodging, without taking solemn leave  
first of the owner. Ha, his handkercher !  
Thou'rt lib'ral to thy Father even in death,  
leav'st him a legacie to drie his tears,  
which are too slow ; they should create a deluge.  
O my dear *Abilqualis* !

*Tar.* You exceed now  
as much in grief as you did then in rage,  
One drop of this pious paternal softnesse  
had ransom'd him from ruine. Dear Sir, rise :  
my grief's divided, and I know not whether  
I should lament you living, or him dead.  
Good Sir, erect your looks. Not stir ! His sorrow  
makes him insensible. Ha, there's no motion  
left in his vital spirits : The excesse  
of grief has stifled up his pow'rs, and crack'd  
(I fear) his ag'd hearts cordage. Help, the Emperor,  
he Emperor's dead ; Help, help.

*Abraham,*

## Revenge for Honour.

47

*Abraham, Simanthes, Mesfises, Mura*

*Abr.* What dismal outcrie's this?  
our royal father dead! The handkercher has wrought I see.

*Tar.* Yes; his big heart  
vanquish'd with sorrow, that in's violent rage,  
he doom'd his much lov'd son to timeless death,  
could not endure longer on its weak strings,  
but crack'd with weight of sorrow. Their two spirits,  
by this, are met in their delightful passage  
to the blest shades; we in our tears are bound  
to cal you our dread Sovereign.

*Ommes.* Long live *Abraham*  
Great Caliph of *Arabia*.

*Abr.* 'Tis a tiele  
we cannot covet, Lords, it comes attended  
with so great cares and troubles, that our youth  
start at the thought of them, even in our sorrows  
which are so mightie on us; our weak spirits  
are readie to relinquish the possession  
they've of mortalitie, and take swift flight  
after our roial friends. *Simanthes*, be it  
your charge to see all fitting preparation  
provided for the funerals.

*Enter Selinthus.*

*Sel.* Where's great *Almanzor*?

*Abr.* O *Selinthus*, this  
day is the hour of funerals grief; for his  
crueltie to my brother, has translated  
him to immortalitie.

*Sel.* Hee'll have attendants  
to wait on him to our great prophets paradise,  
ere he be readie for his grave. The Souldiers  
all mad with rage for the Princes slaughter,  
have vow'd by all oaths Souldiers can invent,  
(and that's no smal store) with death and destruction,  
to pursue sullen *Mura*.

*Abr.* *Tarifa*,  
use your authoritie to keep their violence  
in due obedience. We're so fraught with grief,  
we have no room for any other passion  
in our distracted bosome. Take these roial bodies  
and place them on that couch; here where they fell,  
they shal be imbalm'd. Yet put them out of our sight,  
their veins draw fresh drops from our heart.

Anon we'll shew our selves to chear the afflicted  
Subject.

*a Shout.*

*Omnis* Long live *Abraben*, great Caliph of Arabia.

*Exeunt*

*Abr.* And who can say now, *Abraben* is a villain?

I am saluted King with acclamations  
that deaf the Heavens to hear, with as much joy  
as if I had achiev'd this Scepter by  
means fair and vertuous. 'Twas this handkercher  
that did to death *Almanzor*; so infected,  
its least insensible vapour has full power;  
apply'd to th' eye, or any other Organ,  
can drink its poyson in to vanquish Nature,  
though nere so strong and youthful. 'Twas *Simanthes*  
devis'd it for my brother, and my cunning  
transferr'd it to *Almanzor*; 'tis no matter,  
my worst impiety is held now religious.  
'Twixt Kings and their inferiors there's this ods,  
These are meer men, we men, yet earthly gods. *Exit.*

*Abilr.* 'Twas well the Muts prov'd faithful, otherwise  
I'd lost my breath with as much speed and silence  
as those who do expite in dreams, their health  
seeming no whit abated. But 'twas wisely  
consider'd of me, to prepare those sure  
instruments of destruction: The suspicion  
I had by *Abraben* of my fathers fears  
of my unthought ambition, did instruct me  
by making them mine, to secure my safety.  
Would the inhumane Surgeon had tane  
these blessed lights from me; that I had liv'd for ever  
doom'd to perpetual darkness, rather then  
*Tarifa's* fears had so appeach'd her honour.  
Well, villain Brother, I have found, that by  
my seeming death, which by my lives best arts  
I ne're should have had knowledg of. Dear Father,  
though thou to me wert pitiless, my heart  
weeps tears of blood, to see thy age thus like  
a lofty pine fall, eaten through by th' gin  
from its own Stock descending: He has agents  
in his ungracious wickednesse: *Simanthes*  
he has discover'd: Were they multitudes  
as numerous as collected sands, and mighty  
in force as mischief, they should from my Justice  
meet their due punishment. *Abraben* by this  
is proclaim'd Caliph, yet my undoubted right,



## Revenge for Honour.

49

when 't shall appear I'me living, wil reduce  
the people to my part; the armie's mine,  
whither I must withdraw unseen: the night  
wil best secure me. What a strange *Chimera*  
of thought posselles my dul brain! *Caropia*,  
thou hast a share in them: Fate, to thy mercie  
I do commit my self; who scapes the snare  
once, has a certain caution to beware.

*Exit.*

Scen. 2. *Enter Caropia and Perilinda.*

*Car.* Your Lord is not returned yet!

*Per.* No, good Madam:

pray do not thus torment your self, the Prince  
(I warrant you) wil have no injurie  
by saving of your honour; do you think  
his father wil be so extreme outrageous  
for such a trifle, as to force a woman  
with her good liking?

*Car.* My ill boding soul  
beats with prefages ominous. Would heaven  
I'd stood the hazard of my incens'd Lords furie,  
rather then he had run this imminent danger.  
Could you ne're learn, which of the slaves it was  
betray'd our close loves to loath'd *Mura's* notice?

*Per.* No indeed could I not; but here's my Lord,  
pray Madam do not grieve so!

*Enter Mur.*

*Mu.* My *Caropia*,  
dress up thy looks in their accustom'd beauties,  
cal back the constant spring into thy cheeks,  
that droope like lovely Violets, o're charg'd  
with too much mornings dew; shoot from thy eyes  
a thousand flames of joy. The lustful Prince,  
that like a foul thief, rob'd thee of thy honour  
by his ungracious violence, has met  
his roial fathers Justice.

*Car.* Now my fears  
carry too sure an augury! you would fain  
sooth me, my Lord, out of my flood of sorrows;  
what reparation can that make my honour,  
though he have tasted punishment?

*Mu.* His life  
is fain the off-spring of thy chastitie,  
which his hot lust polluted: nay, *Caropia*,

to save himself, when he but felt the torment  
 applied to his lascivious eies; although  
 at first he did with impudence acknowledg  
 thy rape, he did invade thy spotless virtue,  
 protested, only 'twas to save thy honor,  
 he took on him thy rape, when with consent  
 and not constrain'd, thou yeildedst to the looseness  
 of his wild vicious flames.

*Car.* Could he be so unjust, my Lord?

*Mu.* He was, and he has paid for't;  
 the malicious Souldier, while he was a losing  
 his eies, made violent head to bring him rescue, which  
 pul'd his ruine on him. But no more  
 of such a prodigie; may his black memorie  
 perish even with his ashes. My *Caropia*,  
 the flourishing trees widow'd by winters violence  
 of their fair ornaments, when 'tis expir'd once,  
 put forth again with new and virgin freshness,  
 their bushie beauties; it should be thy emblem.  
 Display agen those chaste immaculate glories,  
 which the harsh winter of his lust had wither'd;  
 and I'll agen be wedded to thy vertues,  
 with as much joy, as when thou first enrich'd me  
 with their pure maiden beauties. Thou art dul,  
 and dost not gratulate with happie welcoms,  
 the triumphs of thy vengeance.

*Car.* Are you sure, my Lord, the Prince is dead?

*Mu.* Pish, I beheld him breathlesse.  
 Take comfort best *Caropia*, thy disgrace  
 did with his loath'd breath vanish.

*Car.* I could wish though,  
 that he had falne by your particular vengeance,  
 rather then by th' laws rigor; you're a Souldier  
 of glorie, great in war for brave performance:  
 me thinks 't had been far nobler, had you call'd him  
 to personal satisfaction: had I been  
 your husband, you my wife, and ravished by him;  
 my resolution would have arm'd my courage  
 to've stroke him thus: The dead Prince sends you that.

*Stab him*

*Mu.* O, I am slain!

*Car.* Would it were possible  
 to kil even thy eternitie. Sweet Prince,  
 how shal I satisfie thy unhappie ruins!  
 Ha, not yet breathlesse! To increase thy anguish

even

## Revenge for Honour.

51

even to despair, know, *Abilqualis* was  
more dear to me, then thy foul selfe was odious,  
and did enjoy me freely.

*Mu.* That I had  
but breath enough to blast thee.

*Car.* 'Twas his brother  
(curse on his art) seduc'd me to accuse  
him of my rape. Do you groane, prodigie!  
take this as my last bountie.

*Stab again.*

*Enter Perilinda.*

*Per.* O Madam, Madam,  
what shal we do? the house is round beset  
with Souldiers; Madam, they do sweare they'le tear  
my Lord, for the sweet Princes death, in pieces.

*Car.* This hand has sav'd  
their furie that just labour: yet I'le make  
use of their malice, help to convey  
him into 's Chamber.

*Enter Osman, Gasselles, Souldiers.*

*Gas.* Where is this villain, this traitor *Mura*?

*Car.* Heaven knowes what violence  
their furie may assault me with; be't death,  
't shall be as welcome, as sound healthful sleeps  
to men oppress'd with sicknesse. What's the matter?  
what means this outrage?

*Os.* Marry, Ladie gay,  
We're come to cut your little throat; pox on you,  
and all your sex; you've caus'd the noble Princes  
death, wild-fire take you fort, weel talk with you  
at better leisure: you must needs be ravished!  
and could not like an honest woman, take  
the curtesie in friendly sort!

*Gas.* We trifle:  
her husband may escape us. Say, where is he?  
or you shall die, ere you can pray

*Sold.* Here, here I have found the vallain! what, do you  
sleep so soundly? ne're wake more, this for the  
Prince, you rogue: let's tear him piecemeale.  
Do you take your death in silence, dog!

*Car.* You appear indow'd with some humanitie,  
you have tane his life; let not your hate last  
after death; let me embalm his bodie with  
my tears, or kil me with him.

*Os.* Now you've said the word,

we care not if we do.

*Enter Tarifa.*

*Tar.* Slaves, unhand  
the Ladie, who dares offer her least violence,  
from this hand meets his punishment. *Gafelles*,  
*Osman*, I thought you had been better temper'd,  
then thus to raise up mutinies. In the name  
of *Abrahen* our now Caliph, I command you,  
desist from these rebellious practises,  
and quietly retire into the Camp,  
and there expect his pleasure.

*Gaf.* *Abrahen* Caliph!

There is some hopes then, we shall gaine our pardons:  
Long live great *Abrahen*. Souldiers, sink away,  
our vow is consummate.

*Car.* O my deare Lord!

*Tar.* Be gone.

*Os.* Yes, as quietly  
as if we were in flight before the foe;  
the general pardon at the coronation,  
wil bring us off, I'me sure.

*Tar.* Alas, good Madam!

I'me sorrie that these miseries have saln  
with so much rigor on you; pray take comfort:  
your husband prosecuted with too much violence  
Prince *Abilqualis*'s ruine.

*Car.* It appeared so!

what worlds of woes have hapless I given life to,  
and yet survive them!

*Tar.* Do not with such furie  
torment your innocent self. I'me sure the Emperor  
*Abrahen*, wil number 't'mongst his greatest sorrows,  
that he has lost your husband. I must give him  
notice of these proceedings. Best peace keep you,  
and settle your distractions.

*Car.* not until

I'me settled in my peaceful urne. This is yet  
some comfort to me, 'midst the floods of woes,  
that do overwhelm me for the Princes death,  
that I reveng'd it safely; though I prize  
my life at no more value then a foolish  
ignorant Indian does a Diamond,  
which for a bead of Jet or glass, he changes:  
Nor would I keep it, were it not with fuller,  
more noble braverie, to take revenge  
for my Lord *Abilqualis*'s timelesse slaughter.

## Revenge for Honour,

+53

I must use craft and myſterie. Diſſembling  
is held the natural qualitie of our Sex,  
nor wil't be hard to practice. This ſame *Abraham*,  
that by his brothers ruine weilds the Scepter,  
whether out of his innocence or malice,  
'twas that perſwaded me to accuſe him of  
my rape. The die is caſt, I am reſolv'd  
to thee my *Abilqualis* I will come.  
A death for love, 's no death but Martyrdom. *Exit.*

## ACTUS QUINTUS. Scenai.

*Enter Abilqualis, Selinthus, Gaſſelles, Ofman,  
Souldiers, and Muſs.*

*Abil.* NO more, good faithful Souldiers; thank the powers  
divine, has brought me back to you in ſafety;  
the traitorous practiſes againſt our life,  
and our deare fathers, poiſon'd by our brother;  
we have diſcoverd, and ſhall take juſt vengeance  
on the unnatural paricide: Retire  
into your tents, and peaceſully expect  
the event of things, you *Ofman* and *Gaſſelles*  
ſhall into th' Citie with me.

*Of.* We wil march  
through the world with thee, dear Sovereign,  
gear *Abilqualis*.

*Abil. Selinthus,*  
give you our dear *Tariſa* ſpeedie notice  
we are again among the living: pray him  
to let our loyal Subjects in the Citie,  
have ſure intelligence of our eſcape;  
and deareſt friends and fellowes, let not your  
too loud expreſſions of your joy, for our  
unlook'd for welfare, ſubject to diſcoverie  
our unexpected ſafety.

*Sel.* Never fear: they'r truſtie Mirmidons, and wil ſtick cloſe  
to you their dear *Achilles*; but my Lord,  
the wiſeſt may imagine it were ſafer  
for you to reſt here 'mong your armed legions,  
then to intruſt your perſon in the City,  
whereas it ſeems by the paſſ'd ſtorie, you  
not know friends from enemies.

*Abil*



*Abil. Selimthus,*

Thy honest care declares the zealous duty  
thou ow'st thy Sovereign: but what danger can  
assault us there, where there is none suspects  
we are alive? we'll go surveigh the state  
of things, i'th' morning we will seize the Palace,  
and then proclaim our Right. Come, valiant Captains,  
you shall be our companions.

*Gaf.* And we'll guard you  
safe, as you were encompass'd with an Army.

*Sel.* You guard your own fools heads; Is 't fit his safety,  
on which our lives and fortunes have dependance,  
should be expos'd unto your single valour?  
Pray once let your friends rule you, that you may  
rule them hereafter. Your good brother *Abraben*  
has a strong faction, it should seem i'th' Court:  
and those these Blood-hounds follow'd the sent hotly  
till they had worried *Mura*. He has other  
allies of no mean consequence; your Eunuch  
*Mefishes* his chief Favourite, and *Simanthus*.

*Abil.* It was that Villain that betray'd my Love  
to him and slaught'ring *Mura*.

*Sel.* Very likely.

An arranter, falser Parasite, never was  
cut like a Colt. Pray Sir, be wise this once;  
at my intreaties; and for ever after  
use your discretion as you please: these night works  
I do not like; yet e're the morning I will bring  
*Tarifa* to you.

*Abil.* You shall o're rule us. Poor *Caropia*, these  
thoughts are thy vot'ries; love thy active fire,  
flames out when present, absent in desire. *Exeunt.*

Scen. 2. Enter *Abraben*, *Simanthus* and *Mefishes*.

*Abr.* What State and Dignitie's like that of Scepters?  
With what an awful Majesty resembles it  
the Powers above? the inhabitants of that  
Superior world are not more subject  
to them, then these to us; they can but tremble  
when they do speak in thunder; at our frowns  
these shake like Lambs at lightning. Can it be  
impiety by any means to purchase  
this earthly Deity, Sovereignty. I did sleep

this

this night with as secure and calme a peace,  
as in my former innocence. Conscience,  
thou'rt but a terror, first devis'd by the fears  
of Cowardise, a sad and fond remembrance,  
which men should shun, as Elephants clear springs,  
lest they behold their own deformities,  
and start at their grim shadowes. Ha, *Mefishes*!

*Mef.* My Royal Lord!

*Abr.* Call me thy Friend, *Mefishes*,  
thou equally dost share our heart, best Eunuch;  
there is not in the stock of earthly blessings  
another I could wish to make my state  
completely fortunate, but one; and to  
atchieve possession of that bliss, thy diligence  
must be the fortunate Instrument.

*Mef.* Be it dangerous  
as the affrights Sea men do fain in Tempests,  
I'll undertake it for my gracious Sovereign,  
and perish, but effect it,

*Abr.* No, there is  
not the least shew of peril in't; 'tis the want  
of fair *Caropia's* long covered beauties  
that doth afflict thy *Abraben*. Love, *Mefishes*,  
is a most stubborn Malady in a Lady, not cur'd  
with that felicity, that are other passions,  
and creeps upon us by those ambushes,  
that we perceive our selves sooner in love,  
then we can think upon the way of loving.  
The old flames break more brightly from th'ashes  
where they have long layn hid, like the young Phenix  
that from her spicie pile revives more glorious.  
Nor can I now extinguish't; it has pass'd  
the limits of my reason, and intend  
my wil, where like a fixt Star 't settles,  
never to be removed thence.

*Mef.* Cease your fears;  
I that could win her for your brother, who  
could not boast half your masculine Perfections,  
for you will vanquish her. *Enter Simanthus.*

*Sim.* My Lord, the widow  
of slaughtered *Mura*, fair *Caropia* does  
humbly intreat access to your dread presence;  
Shall we permit her entrance?

*Abr.* With all freedom

and best regard. *Mefites*, this arrives  
beyond our wish. I'll trie my eloquence  
in my own cause; and if I fail, thou then  
shalt be my Advocate.

*Mef.* Your humblest vassal.

*Abr.* With-draw and leave us, and give strict order  
none approach our presence

till we do call. It is not fit her sorrows

should be survey'd by common eie. *Caropia*, welcom;

and would we could as easily give thee comfort

as we allow thee more then mod'rate pitie.

In tears those eyes cast forth a greater lustre,

then sparkling rocks of Diamonds inclos'd

in swelling seas of Pearl.

*Car.* Your Majestie

is pleas'd to wanton with my miseries,

which truly you, if you have nature in you,

ought to bear equall part in your deer brothers

untimely losse, occasion'd by my falshood;

and your improvident counsel: 'Tis that calls

these hearty sorrows up, I am his Murtheresse.

*Abr.* 'Twas his own destinie, not our bad intentions

took him away from earth; he was too heavenly,

fit only for th' societic of Angels,

'mongst whom he sings glad hymns to thy perfections,

celebrating with such eloquence thy beauties,

that those immortal essences forget

to love each other by intelligence,

and doat on the Idea of thy Sweetnesse.

*Car.* These gentle blandishments, and his innocent curllage

had I as much of malice as a Tigresse

rob'd of her young, would melle me into meeknesse.

But I'll not be a woman.

*Abr.* Sing out, Angel,

and charm the world (were it at mortal difference)

to peace with thine enchantments. What soft murmurs

are those that steal through those pure roſie organs,

like aromatick west-winds, when they flie

through fruitful mists of fragrant mornings dew,

to get the Spring with child of flowers and spices?

Disperse these clouds, that like the vail of night,

with unbecoming darknesse shade thy beauties,

and strike a new day from those orient eies,

to gild the world with brightnesse.

*Car.* Sir,

*Car.* Sir, these flatteries  
neither besit the ears of my true sorrows,  
nor yet the utterance of that reall sadnesse  
should dwel in you. Are these the fun'ral rites  
you pay the memorie of your roiall Father,  
and much lamented Brother?

*Abr.* They were mortall,  
and to lament them, were to shew I envi'd  
th' immortal joyes of that true happinesse  
their glorious souls (disfranchis'd from their flesh)  
possesse to perpetuities and fulnesse.  
Besides, (*Caropia*) I have other griefs  
more neer my heart, that circle 't with a sicknesse  
will shortly number me among their fellowship,  
if speedier remedie be not apply'd  
to my most desp'rate maladie.

*Car.* I shall  
(if my hand fail not my determin'd courage)  
send you to their societie far sooner  
then you expect or covet. Why, great Sir,  
what grief, unlesse your sorrow for their losse,  
is't can afflict you, that command all blessings  
men wittie in ambition of excesse  
can wish, to please their fancies?

*Abr.* The want only  
of that which I've so long desir'd; thy love,  
thy love, *Caropia*, without which my Empire,  
and all the pleasures flowing from its greatnesse,  
will be but burdens, soul-tormenting troubles.  
There's not a beam shot from those grief drown'd Comets  
but (like the Sun's, when they break forth of showers)  
dart flames more hot and piercing. Had I never  
doated before on thy divine perfections,  
viewing thy beautie thus adorn'd by sadnesse,  
my heart, though marble, actuated to softnesse,  
would burn like sacred incense, is self being  
the Altar, Priest, and Sacrifice.

*Car.* This is  
as unexpected, as unwelcome, Sir.  
Howere you're pleas'd to mock me and my griefs  
with these impertinent, unmeant discourses,  
I cannot have so prodigal a faith,  
to give them the least creditt, and it is  
unkindly done, thus to deride my sorrows.

the virgin Turtles hate to joyn their pureness  
with widow'd mates; my Lord, you are a Prince,  
and such as much detest to utter falsehoods,  
as Saints do perjuries: why should you strive then  
to lay a bait to captivate my affections; when your  
greatnesse conjoin'd with your youths masculine beauties,  
are to a womans frailtie, strong temptations.  
You know the storie too of my misfortunes,  
that your dead brother, did with vicious loosenesse,  
corrupt the chaste streams of my spotlesse vertues,  
and left me soiled like a long pluck'd rose,  
whose leaves dissever'd, have forgon their sweetnesse.

*Abr.* Thou hast not (my *Caropia*) thou to me  
art for thy sent stil fragrant (and as precious  
as the prime virgins of the Spring, the violets,  
when they do first display their early beauties,  
til all the winds in love, do grow contentious,  
which from their lips should ravish the first kisses.  
*Caropia*, thinkst thou I should fear the Nuptials  
of this great Empire, 'cause it was my brothers?  
As I succeeded him in all his glories,  
'tis fit I do succeed him in his love.  
'Tis true, I know thy fame fel by his practise;  
which had he liv'd, hee'd have restored by marriage,  
by it repair'd thy injur'd honors ruines.

I'm bound to do it in religious conscience;  
It is a debt his incens'd ghost would quarrel  
me living for, should I not pay't with fulnesse.

*Car.* Of what frail temper is a womans weaknesse  
words writ in waters, have more lasting Essence,  
then our determinations.

*Abr.* Come, I know,  
thou must be gentle, I perceive a combat  
in thy soft heart, by th' intervening blisshes  
that strive to adorn thy cheek with purple beauties,  
and drive the lovely liverie of thy sorrows,  
the Ivorie paleness, out of them. Think, *Caropia*,  
with what a setled unrevolting truth  
I have affected thee; with what heat, what pureness,  
and when upon mature considerations,  
I found I was unworthie to enjoy  
a treasure of such excellent grace and goodnesse;  
I did desist, smothering my love in anguish;  
anguish! to which the soul of humane torments,



## Revenge for Honour.

59

compar'd, were pains not easie, but delicious;  
yet still the secret flames of my affections,  
like hidden virtues in some bashful man,  
grew great and serventer by those suppressions.

Thou wert created only for an Empresse;  
despise not then thy destinie, now greatnesse,  
love, Empire, and what ere may be held glorious,  
courts thy acceptance like obedient Vassals.

*Car.* I have consider'd, and my serious thoughts  
tel me, tis folly to refuse these profers:  
to put off my mortalitie, the pleasures  
of life, which like full streams, do flow from greatnesse,  
to wander i'th' unpeopled air, to keep  
societie with ghastly apparitions,  
where's neither voice of friends, nor visiting suitors  
breaths to delight our ears, and all this for  
the fame of a fell murtherer. I have blood  
enough alreadie on my soul, more then  
my tears can e're wash off. My roial Lord,  
if you can be so merciful and gracious,  
to take a woman laden with afflictions,  
big with true sorrow, and religious penitence  
for her amiss, her life and after actions,  
shal studie to deserve your love. But surely  
this is not serious.

*Abr.* Not the vows which votaries  
make to the powers above, can be more fraught  
with binding sanctitie.

This holy kiss

confirms our mutual vows: never til now

was I true Caliph of *Arabia*.

*Enter, Enter, Enter,*

*Abr.* Ha, what tumult's that!

Be you all furies, and thou the great'st of divels,  
*Abrahen* wil stand you all, unmov'd as mountains.

This good sword

if you be air, shal disinchant you from  
your borrow'd figures.

*Abil.* No, ill-natur'd monster,  
we're all corporeal, and survive to take  
revenge on thy inhumane acts, at name  
of which, the bashful elements do shake  
as if they teem'd with prodigies. Dost not tremble  
at thy inhumane villainies? *Dear Caropia,*

quit the infectious viper, lest his touch  
poison thee past recoverie.

*Abr.* No, she shall not ;  
nor you, until this body be one wound.  
Lay a rude hand upon me ! *Abilqualis*,  
how ere thou scapst my practises with life,  
I am not now to question ; we were both  
sons to one father, whom, for love of Empire,  
when I believ'd thee strangled by those Muts,  
I sent to his eternal rest ; nor do I  
repent the fact yet, I have been titled *Caliph*  
a day, which is to my ambitious thoughts,  
honor enough to eternize my big name  
to all posteritie. I know thou art  
of valiant noble soul ; let not thy brother  
fal by ignoble hands, oppress'd by number ;  
draw thy bright weapon ; as thou art in Empire,  
thou art my rival in this Ladies love,  
whom I esteem above all joyes of life :  
for her and for this Monarchie, let's trie  
our strengths and fates : the impartial fates  
to him, who has the better cause, in justice  
must needs design the victorie.

*Abil.* In this offer,  
though it proceed from desperatenesse, not valor ;  
thou showst a masculine courage, and we wil not  
render our cause so abject as to doubt,  
but our just arme has strength to punish  
thy most unheard of treacheries.

*Tar.* But you shall not  
be so unjust to us and to your right,  
to try your causes most undoubted Justice,  
gainst the despairing ruffian ; Souldiers, pul  
the Lady from him, and disarm him.

*Abil.* Stay !  
though he doth merit multitudes of death,  
we would not murder his eternitie  
by sudden execution ; yeild your self,  
and we'll allow you libertie of life,  
til by repentance you have purg'd your sin ;  
and so if possible, redeem your soul  
from future punishment.

*Abr.* Pish, tel fools of souls,  
and those effeminate cowards that do dreame

of those fantastick other worlds: there is  
not such a thing in nature; all the soul  
of man is resolution, which expires  
never from valiant men, till their last breath,  
and then with it like to a flame extinguisht  
for want of matter, 't does not dy, but rather  
ceases to live. Injoy in peace your Empire,  
and as a legacy of *Abrabens* love,  
take this fair Lady to your Bride.

*stab her.*

*Abil.* Inhumane Butcher!  
has slain the Lady. Look up, best *Caropia*,  
run for our surgeons: I'll give half my Empire  
to save her precious life.

*Abr.* She has enough,  
or mine aym fail'd me, to procure her passage  
to the eternal dwellings: nor is this  
cruelty in me; I alone was worthy  
to have injoy'd her beauties. Make good haste  
*Caropia*, or my soul, if I have any,  
will hover for thee in the clouds. This was  
the fatal engine which betray'd our father  
to his untimely death, made by *Simanthes*  
for your use, *Abilqualis*: and who has this  
about him and would be a slave to your base mercy,  
deserved death more than by dayly tortures;  
and thus I kiss'd my last breath. Blast you all.

*dies.*

*Tar.* Damn'd desperate villain.

*Abil.* O my dear *Caropia*,  
my Empire now will be displeasing to me  
since I must lose thy company. This surgeon,  
where's this surgeon?

*Sel.* Drunk perhaps.

*Car.* 'Tis but needlesse,  
no humane help can save me: yet me thinks  
I feel a kind of pleasing ease in your  
embraces. I should utter something,  
and I have strength enough, I hope, left yet  
to effect my purpose. In revenge for your  
suppos'd death, my lov'd Lord, I slew my husband,

*Abil.* I'me sorry thou hast that sin to charge thy soul with,  
'twas rumour'd by the souldiers.

*Sel.* Couzens mine, your necks are safe agen now.

*Car.* And came hither  
with an intent to have for your sake slain your brother  
*Abraben*,

*Abraham*, had not his curtesie and winning carriage  
alter'd my resolution, with this poniard  
I'de struck him here about the heart.

Stabs *Abil*.

*Abil*. O I am slain, *Caropia*,  
and by thy hand. Heavens, you are just, this is  
revenge for thy dear honor which I murthered,  
though thou wer't consenting to it.

*Car*. True, I was so,  
and not repent it yet, my sole ambition  
was to have liv'd an Empresse, which since fate  
would not allow, I was resolv'd no woman  
after my selfe should ere enjoy that glory,  
you dear *Abilqualir*: which since my  
weak strength has serv'd me to performe, I dye  
willingly as an infant. O now I faint,  
life's death to those that keep it by constraint.

dye.

*Tar*. My dear Lord,  
is there no hopes of life? must we be wretched?

*Abil*. Happier, my *Tarifa*, by my death:  
but yester day I playd the part in jest  
which I now act in earnest. My *Tarifa*,  
the Empire's thine, I'me sure thou'lt rul'e  
with justice, and make the subject happy. Thou hast a Son  
of hopefull growing vertues to succeed thee,  
commend me to him, and from me intreat him  
to shun the temptings of lascivious glances.

*Sel*. 'Las good Prince!  
hee'll dy indeed. I fear, he is so full  
of serious thoughts and Counsels.

*Abil*. For this slaughtred body,  
let it have decent burial with slain *Muras*,  
but let not *Abrahams* corps have so much honor  
to come ith' royal monument: lay mine  
by my dear fathers: for that trecherous Eunuch,  
and Lord *Simanthes*, use them as thy justice  
tells thee they have merited; for Lord *Selinthus*,  
advance him (my *Tarifa*) hee's of faithfull  
and well deserving vertues.

*Sel*. So I am,  
I thought, it would come to me anon:  
poor Prince, I e'ne could dy with him.

*Abil*. And for those souldiers, and those our most faithfull  
*Mints*, that my life once sav'd, let them be  
well rewarded; death and I are almost now

## Revenge for Honour.

63

at unitie. Farewell.

*dyes.*

*Tar.* Sure I shall not  
survive these sorrows long. Muts, take those Traitors  
to prison; we will shortly passe their sentence,  
which shall be death inevitable. Take up  
that fatal instrument of poisonous mischief,  
and see it burn'd, *Gaselles*. Gentlemen,  
Fate has made us your King against our wishes.

*Sel.* Long live *Tarifa*, Caliph of *Arabia*.

*Tar.* We have no time now for your acclamations;  
these are black sorrows Festival. Bear off  
in state that royal Bodie; for the other,  
since twas his will, let them have burial,  
but in obscuritie. By this it may,  
as by an ev'dent rule be understood,  
they're onely truly great, wh' are truly good.

*Recorders*

*Exeunt omnes.*

*Flourish.*

### FINIS.

---

### EPILOGUE.

**I**'M much displeas'd the Poet has made me  
The Epilogue to his sad Tragedie.  
Would I had dy'd honestly amongst the rest,  
Rather then live to th' last, now to be prest  
To death by your hard Censures. Pray you say,  
What is it you dislike so in this Play,  
That none applaude? Believe it, I should faint,  
Did not some smile, and keep me by constraint  
From the sad qualm. What pow'r is in your breath,  
That you can save alive, and doom to death,  
Even whom you please? thus are your judgments free,  
Most of the rest are slain, you may save me.  
But if death be the word, I pray bestow it  
Where it best fits. Hang up the Poet.







*A few Words*

To all JUDGES, JUSTICES, and  
MINISTERS of the LAW in  
ENGLAND.

From ANTHONY PEARSON.

July 16. 1654

TO the Judges of life and death, and Judges of *Nisi prius*, as they call it, who give oaths to Justices, Juries and witnesses, and Justices that give oaths to Constables and others. To the light which Christ Jesus hath enlightened you withal, I speake, that with it you may see you are out of the doctrine of Christ, who saith, Swear not at all, in all your communications let your yea be yea, and your nay be nay; whatsoever is more, is evil. So you that swear are in the evil, and with the light of Christ Jesus, you may see that you be out of the doctrine of the Apostle, who said, my brethren; swear not at all, not by heaven, nor by earth, nor any other oath, lest you fall into condemnation of the diuel; so you that swear are fallen into the condemnation of the diuel; and you that cause others to sweare, or compel them, or imprison them, or fine them if they will not, you are out of the doctrine of Christ and the Apostle your selves, and seek to bring others out of his doctrine, into the same condemnation of the diuel where you are. Praised be God, with the light which comes from Christ, you are seene to be no brethren of Christ, who are out of his doctrine, and doth not doe his will. I am the light of the world, and doth enlighten every one that comes into the world saith Christ; now every one loving this light which Christ Jesus hath enlightened you withal; it will bring you to doe his will, and know his doctrine; and then in all your communications you will be kept to yea and

and nay, and never an oath shall be heard in the land, for the land mournes because of oathes. Now you that hate this light which Christ Jesus hath enlightened you withal; you swear, and compel others to sweare; and with this light you are to be condemned, who are out of his doctrine. To the light in all your consciences I speak, which shall witnesse me eternally, and condemne all you that hate it, and is the light of Christ, which shewes your sinne and evill deeds.

*From him who is a lover of your soules and your eternal good, that with the light you may see the way to salvation, to Christ, from whence the light comes.*

### *Concerning oathes.*

The word of the Lord the living God to all you who be out of the doctrine of Christ, swearing, and doe swear, and compell others to swear, when Christ saith *swear not at all*: and the Apostle saith; *swear not at all*, by any oath, least you fall into condemnation of the Devill: so yee that sweare and compel others to sweare are fallen into the condemnation of the Devil. And seeke to bring others into the same condemnation of the Devill, and Christ saith, whatsoever cometh above yea and nay, cometh of evill: who saith, swear not at all: and you that swear and compell to swear are in the evill; now if ye alleadge *Jacob* sware, *Joseph* sware; Christ Jesus reignes over the house of *Jacob* and *Joseph*, who saith, swear not at all, this is the Sonne of God, hear him, who teacheth true doctrine and they that teach men another doctrine or gospell to swear, they all be accursed: yea, if an Angell from heaven. Now if you alleadge that *Abraham* sware, who saw the dayes of the Sonne and rejoyced, and if you alleadge that *Moses* sware who wrote of, Christ, who said, God would raise up a Prophet like unto him, him should the people heare, Christ Jesus the Sonne of God, who saith swear not at all; here the Sonne of God is come, whom *Abraham* saw, *Moses* wrote of; who saith swear not at all; whom yee must hear *Acts* 7. and him you doe not hear that sweares, the Sonne of God: but with the light you are condemned which comes from the Sonne of God, who saith, swear not at all. Now you that say *Solomon* sware, and the Priests sware under the Law: and the Prophets sware, My answer is: Christ Jesus the Sonne of God, who is the end of the Law and the Prophets, and a greater then *Solomon*, the unchangeable Priest, saith, swear not at all: but in all your communications let your yea be yea, and your nay be nay, for whatsoever is more is evil. Now if you alleadge that men in strife sware, and the oath was the end of controversies and strife among men, which the Apostle brought as a figure: as God swearing

by

by himsele, who could not finde a greater; who saith, verily men swear by the greater: My answer is this; where men are in strife in that nature, they be our of the doctrine of Christ. and are evill, and do not heare Christs doctrine who saith, swear not at all. Now if you alleadge the Angell sware in the *Revelation*, My answer is this: I bring my first begotten into the world saith the Lord, let all the Angells worship him: the Sonne of God, who saith swear not at all, but in all your communication let your yea be yea and your nay be nay, for what is more is evil: and this sonne of God is above Angells and men that are in strife, and the end of the Prophets, and the end of the Law, and the first covenant and Priest in it, and this Sonne of God reignes over the house of *Jacob* and *Joseph*, a greater then *Solomon* or *David* who swore, for he called him Lord, whom *Abraham* saw, the Sonne of God, who saith swear not at all, *This is he who brings peace on the earth and good will towards men*, and the sword in the earth: *he that hath ears to hear let him hear.*

*Moved of the Lord from the Spirit of the Lord, a lover of your soules and your eternall good, for the establisbing of righteousness and the doctrine of Christ, and cleansing the Land of evill doers, and for establisbing the Gospel: and a lover of the Creation.*

### Concerning Vagabonds.

**T**HE word of the Lord to you powers of the earth, Judges and Justices, who have called them and given them the names of Vagabonds, which the Lord hath sent forth to declare his word, who hath forsaken their outward habitations as the Prophets and Apostles many of them did, which went to speak the word of the Lord freely, and did abide in his commands, these were no vagabonds. *Cain* was the vagabond who did not obey the command of God; for saith the Lord to him, if thou dost wel, shalt thou be accepted? He did not wel, disobeyed the command of God, he was wroth, his countenance fell, he was a vagabond and a fugitive, and was not accepted. So all you that turne from the commands of God, and are wroth, whose countenance fall, which doth not wel, you are not accepted of God. You have no habitation in the Lord; *Cains* way is your way. Certain vagabond fellows rise against the Apostle, and bound themselves with an oath to put him to death, these had no habitation in the Lord, these did not abide in his commands, these were the vagabonds in the way of *Cain*, though they might have habitations outward. The Apostle was no vagabond nor fugitive who had no certaine dwelling place, which went reasoning and disputing in the Synagogues daily, Schools,

and Markets; he was persecuted by such as were vagabonds, who did not obey the commands of God, who did not well; such you prison now who are moved of the Lord to goe in o your Synagogues, Markets, and other places, as peace-breakers or vagabonds; here let the life of the Scriptures judge you all to be ignorant of the letter, and without understanding. The Sonne of man was no vagabond, which had no place to lay his head; you that are turned from the commands of God as *Caine* did, and are in envy and wrath, and doth not well, whose countenance falls; though you may have great habitations in the earth, you are the vagabonds and the fugitives which doth not obey the commands of the Lord, and have no habitation in the Lord; who obey the commands of the Lord are no vagabonds nor fugitives, though they have no certaine dwelling place, as the Prophets and the Apostles, and Sonne of man had not.

To the Judges of life and death, to take heed how you put man or woman to death for cattle, or mony, or any earthly creature, or earthly thing, he that sheds mans blood, by man shall his blood be shed; the law that was received from God according to that of God in the conscience, said, that they should be sold for their theft, if they had not wherewith to make restitution fourfold or sevenfold: To the light in your consciences I speak, that with it you may be brought unto the fear of God, to receive the law from God, which is according to that in every mans conscience. And if you are contrary to it, the law of God will hew you down among the evil doers; which is a terror to the evil doers, and to the praise of them that do well, and to you this is the word of God.

And to you that are Judges amongst men about earthly things, to the light in your consciences I speak, that with it you may be guided to doe justice according to the light in the conscience, that the light in every mans conscience may witnesse you to do justice, and that which is just and equity; else the light of Christ in every ones conscience, wil witnesse and cry against you, which is according to the law of God which is just; that none be burthened, no persons respected; if there be, you that doe, are convicted with the light in your consciences, to be transgressours of the law of God, which is perfect according to that of God in every mans conscience, which light will witnesse the law of God which is perfect. And to you this is the word of God, to the light of Christ in you all I speak, that with it your consciences may be exercised towards God, and towards man; and if you are contrary to it, with it you are to be condemned, this is the condemnation of the world, the light, *Joh. 3.*

#### Concerning Tithes.

And you that do give the Priests Tithes with your Law, and imprison men



if they will not give the Priests tithes with your Law, and make them pay treble damages, and strain the goods, or cattel, bedding, pewter or brasle of such that doth witnesse the unchangeable priesthood, Christ Jesus, and the new Testament, and the new Covenant, and the Gospel, and the everlasting priesthood; and sees the change of the first priesthood that received tithes, and of the law also: It is not for the earth sending it they do not pay the priests tithes; for the earth is the Lords and the fulnesse of it.

Now if you say, that Christ saith, *These things ought you to have done, and not to have left the other undone*, concerning tithes: That was a time before Christ Jesus was sacrificed up: but when hee was sacrificed, and the unchangeable priesthood preached, the changeable was denied, as you may read *Hebrews* the 7th: and they witnessed the unchangeable priest, and suffered the spoiling of their goods joyfully, as we do now for Christs sake; and are the gazing stock of the world, as they were who witnessed the unchangeable priest as they did; and deny the changeable, as the Apostle and they did. Now if you will give your priests tithes, to oppresse the people, and hold up a figure of your own making; if you will act according to the priesthood in the law of God, and the Scriptures, you must let your priests have a Store-house, (as you read in *Malachi* and *Moses* his Writings, and the tithes to be put into the Store-house, and the priests minister it forth to the Widows, to the strangers and the fatherlesse, and they all satisfied widlin his gates, that no beggar may be in *England*, as no beggar was to be in *Israel*: If you should do so, then you might not own Christ Jesus to be come in the flesh, nor owne the resurrection of Christ, nor beleave it; but are haling people before Benches for tithes for Priests and others, burthening them and vexing of them.

So all you that take tithes, and give tithes, and compell people to give Tythes, you are under the condemnation, and the ministry of condemnation, and doe not owne the Apostles Doctrine, who saith, the priesthood was changed, and the law was changed also, *Hebrews* 7. So never a one that gives tithes to the Priests, or compels to give tithes, doth own the Gospel and the unchangeable Priest; but are acting things, and compelling people to act contrary to the first Priesthood and the Scriptures, who do not act with their tithes as the first Priesthood did: with the life and practice of the first Priesthood you are judged out of their practice: and who witnesseth the second priesthood, denies the first, and you both. With the light which comes from Christ, which comprehends the world with it, you are seen, which light is the worlds condemnation, *John* 3. which light brings us to witnesse Christ the unchangeable Priest, and to deny the changeable that takes tithes. For your souls good is this given forth: To the light of Christ in you I speak, that with it you may see the ministration of the first priesthood, which is for condemnation, and the second Priest.

priesthood Christ Jesus. To you this is the word of the Lord, and for your souls good.

**H**E that rules over men should be just, for God is just for whom hee should rule, and the law of God is just by which he should rule. Man when hee turned from God, and transgressed the command of God, the law took hold upon him, and cut down him that transgressed: The law was not made for the righteous, for against such there is no law, but for the sinner: and the law of God which is against the transgressor is just and equall, according to the transgression: which law need not be fetched from beyond the Seas, nor from above, nor from beneath; for all have the work of this law (even the heathen) written in the heart, which is witnessed by the light that shines in the conscience. He that walks according to the law in his Conscience, he is excused; He that transgresseth the law in his conscience, hee is accused and condemned; and so in every mans heart the work of the law being written, in every mans conscience God hath a witnesse that the Law is just and good, and that the punishment is just and equall: Here every transgressor becomes guilty before God, and every mans punishment being just, every mans mouth comes to be stopped, and the righteous law of God in every mans conscience justified. The Law of God is perfect, and endures for ever, and changeth not; which is the same against all Nations, Languages, Kindreds and People, which is witnessed by the Conscience, which is the same in all Nations, Languages, Kindreds and people.

The Law of God respects no mans person, but is the same against every one that transgresseth, whether King, Noble or beggar: that in the conscience is the same in King, Noble and Beggar, and shewes that of one mould and one blood God hath made all Nations of the earth, the King, the Noble, and the beggar; here God is just, who respects no mans person; the law of God is just which respects no mans person, and that in the conscience is just, which witnesses the law, which respects no mans person; here is the ground of justice, the law of God; here is the ground of true judgment, that in the conscience, which beares witnesse to the law in every one, and as is the transgression, so is the law, every transgression is judged by the law; so is every transgression condemned by that in the conscience; the law of God was and is the same, and hath continued in all ages, and doth endure for ever, that in the conscience is the same in all ages and changeth not, but doth endure for ever; he that sinnes against the law, that in the conscience beares witnesse to the law, and by that in the conscience he is accused and condemned, and so his mouth is stopped; and here all the world becomes guilty before God.

The law of God is made already, which was added because of transgression, and changeth

changeth not: he that acts according to the Law, is justified by the Law, and ever was, and through the law he becomes dead to the law, and is excused by that in his conscience, and ever shall be; here God is judge and Law-giver to all whose judgments are just and righteous, who hath placed a witnesse in all, vvhio will judge every one according to their works, out of the book written in the conscience: he that makes lawes, with the Law of God which is made already, he is judged, and with that in his conscience which bears witnesse for God he is condemned; he that turns from the law of God, to obey the law of man, had rather serve man then God, and so with the law of God, and that in his conscience he is judged and condemned from God.

He that is a Minister of God, ordained by God, executes the law of God which is perfect, which is witnessed by that of God in every mans conscience, and to him the soul is subject for conscience sake; but he that makes and executes a law which is not the law of God, hath no witnesse in the conscience for God that his law is just, that his punishment is equal, and to they who witnesse onely the law of God, witnesse against him and his law, and cannot obey him for conscience sake; he that is the Minister of God and executes the law of God, is a servant to God, and judgeth for God, sets not up himselfe in the place of God, but gives all honour to God whose judgements are just, and by turning his sword against all unrighteousnesse, declares the righteousness of God, and is a terror to evil doers, and without respect of persons executes the law upon him that doth evil, and here he is witnessed by that which is of God in every ones conscience, to be just, and the punishment received as from God whose law he executes, who is just, and so every man being condemned in himselfe, his mouth is stopped, no envy against the person raised, but the righteous God the judge and law-giver of the world in his righteousness, cleared and exalted. The law of God is perfect, and endures for ever, and changeth not, that in the conscience is perfect and endures for ever, and changeth not. All lawes which are not perfect, which endure not for ever, and do change, are temporal and carnal, and with the law of God which is spiritual, are judged, and their makers condemned. The law of God respects no mans person; all lawes which doe respect persons, and are not against all sorts of persons alike, are contrary to the law of God, and they that make them, and they that execute them are in the law condemned and convicted as transgressours.

The law of God is witnessed by that in the conscience; all lawes which have not their witnesse in the conscience, are made by the will of man, which is contrary to the law of God, and cannot be obeyed for conscience sake by them who witnesse the law of God.

The law of God is just and equal, life for life, a tooth for a tooth, an eye for an eye; that law which is not equal and just is against the law of God, and dishonours God whose wayes are the wayes of righteousness, and all who inflict punishments that are not according to the offence, set up their owne wills against the law of God, he that takes away life for the creatures it is murder, and the blood shall be upon his head.

The law of God is equal and that in the conscience cries for equity according to the law of God, that law whose ground and foundation is not equity, but needs a court of equity to mitigate its cruelty, is tyranny, and is witnessed against by that in the conscience to be contrary to God, and against the righteous law of God, which is holy and just, and must be throwne down, and all that go about to uphold it. To do unto others, as they would have them do unto thee, this is just, this is equal and equity, and herein is fulfilled the whole law. He that executes a law made in the will of man, so which that in the conscience doth not beare witnesse that its according to the law of God, is not the Minister of God, but is condemned by the law of God, and that in his owne conscience to act his owne will. He that makes lawes which have not a witnesse in the conscience that they are according

sording to the law of God, and he that executes those laws are the enemies of God who would not have him to reigne, and against such have the servants of God been sent alwayes to declare, and against such hath the wrath of the Lord alwayes been revealed, overturning nations and kingdomes that his owne law might be set up.

He that makes laws, and they that execute those laws which are not the law of God, to which that in the conscience beares witness, set themselves in the place of God to overthrow the law of God, to set up their owne wills; these are heathens in what nation soever they dwell, and these shall answer for all the injuries, wrongs, and false judgements that are executed and inflicted. And now is the righteous law-giver the judge of the whole earth arising in his wrath to be avenged of all his enemies who will not have him to rule and reigne, of whose kingdom and dominion there shall be no end.

He that makes a law against that in the conscience which is pure and holy, makes a law against God; and he that executes that law for gifts and rewards, his heart is in the earth for selfe ends, and in the same carnal nature with the Priests who preach for hire, and with the light which is free, which is the gift of God not to be bought and sold for money, he is to be condemned, and with the life of all the judges and holy men of God he is eternally judged.

A. P.

FINIS.



London. Printed for Giles Calvert at the Black-spread-Eagle at the West end of Pauls, 1654.

